



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>

NYPL RESEARCH LIBRARIES



3 3433 08246294 0

Our Sudan,
its pyramids and progress,
by
John Ward.

643

London, J. Murray,
[1905?]

M'WJ

LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS.

	PAGE.
GOLD ORNAMENT WORN BY WOMEN ...	iii
STATUE OF GORDON, KHARTOUM ...	iv
PORTRAIT OF LORD KITCHENER ...	ix
SUNRISE ON THE NILE ...	x
PROGRESS—THE YOUNG IDEA, OMDURMAN ...	xii
PYRAMIDS—AS SEEN FROM THE RAILWAY ...	xv
COLOUR PARTY, 9TH SUDANESE ...	xvi
GORDON'S STEAMER "BORDEIN" ...	xxiv
SKETCH MAP... ..	xxiii, 144

PRELIMINARY CHAPTER.

BATTLE OF TOSKI	1
VILLAGE RAIDED BY DERVISHES ...	2
ABU SIMBEL	3
PORTRAIT—SIR EVELYN WOOD ...	4
" LORD GRENFELL	5
ANCIENT EGYPTIAN SOLDIERS ...	7

CHAPTER II.

LORD CROMER'S DESPATCH.

EXPRESS STEAMER "IBIS"	9
PORTRAIT—LORD CROMER	11
A PASTORAL... ..	12

CHAPTER III.

DESERT RAILWAY.

THE SUDAN EXPRESS (... ..	17
RAILWAY MATERIAL FOR SUDAN ...	19
PORTRAIT—SIR PERCY GIROCARD ...	20
RAILWAY WORKSHOPS	20
NILE NEAR HALFA (3 views)	21
STATION No. 2	22
WADI AMUR BRIDGE	23
ATBARA BRIDGE (3 views)	23
STATION No. 4	24
PLATELAYERS, 1898... ..	24
PYRAMIDS FROM RAILWAY	25
SIRDAR'S LANDING STAGE	26

CHAPTER IV.

SEMNA.

SECOND CATARACT	27
THE NILE AT HALFA	28
" " PALMS	29
RIVER FRONT, HALFA	30
STELE OF BUHEN	31

	PAGE.
USERTESEN I. (portrait of)... ..	30
THOTHMES III. (portrait of)	32
SARRAS FORT	32
" (2 views)	33
SECOND CATARACT	33
TEMPLE, BEN HUR	33
XTH SUDANESE DRILLING	34
SEMNA TEMPLE	35
KUMMA TEMPLE	35
SEMNA TEMPLE	36
" THOTHMES DOING HOMAGE ...	36
USERTESEN'S SIGNET RING... ..	37
" JEWELLER'S WEIGHT	37
MAP OF RIVER, SEMNA	38
SCENE ON RIVER, SEMNA	38
INSCRIPTION ON ROCKS AT SEMNA ...	39
" " KUMMA	39
PORTRAIT OF AMENEMHAT... ..	39
CARVING OF THOTHMES, SEMNA	40
TEMPLE OF AMARA	41
"	42
TEMPLE, MEDINET HABU	42

CHAPTER V.

SOLIB.

THE LION OF AMENHOTEP... ..	43
TEMPLE, LUXOR	44
SOLIB (2 views)	45
TEMPLE AT SEDINGA	46
PLAN OF SOLIB TEMPLE	46
PORTRAIT—QUEEN TYI	47
" AMENHOTEP III	47
TEMPLE AT SOLIB	48
DEFUFA	49
COLOSSI AT THEBES... ..	49
AVENUE OF SPHINXES AT KARNAK ...	49
SCARAB OF AMENHOTEP AND TYI... ..	50
MARRIAGE SCARAB	51
LION HUNT SCARAB	52
TEMPLE OF SESEBI	53
SETI I.	53
" MUMMY	54
COLOSSUS IN QUARRY	54
YOUNG LION... ..	55
SOUTHERN COLOSSUS	56
NORTHERN COLOSSUS	57
KHANDAK	58
RUINS OF MONASTERY	59

OUR SUDAN; ITS PYRAMIDS AND PROGRESS.

	PAGE.		PAGE.
CHAPTER VI.			
JEBEL BARKAL			
COLOSSAL RAM	61	BATTLE OF KERRERI	91
PLANS OF TEMPLES (2)	62	THE ADVANCE TO OMDURMAN (4 scenes) ...	92
SCULPTURES IN TEMPLES (2)	62	KITCHENER ON THE LOOK-OUT	93
SHABAKA—PORTRAIT	63	ENTRY INTO OMDURMAN	94
TAHARQA'S SCARAB	63	SIR HECTOR MACDONALD—PORTRAIT ...	94
" KNEELING PORTRAIT	64	ADVANCE TO OMDURMAN (4 scenes) ...	95
PYRAMIDS OF NURI... ..	65	THE MAHDI'S TOMB, PRESENT STATE ...	96
" JEBEL BARKAL	65	" 2 SEPT., 1898	96
" " FROM S.E....	65	THE ADVANCE TO OMDURMAN (4 scenes) ...	97
RUINED MONASTERY	66	BATTLE OF OMDURMAN	98
VIEW OF JEBEL BARKAL TEMPLE ...	67	THE ADVANCE TO OMDURMAN (3 scenes) ...	99
" ROCK SANCTUARY	67	ERECTING THE KERRERI MONUMENT ...	99
PYRAMIDS OF NURI... ..	67	KHALIFA'S HOUSE	100
" JEBEL BARKAL	67	THE MAHDI'S TOMB AS IT WAS	100
PLAN OF PYRAMIDS, NURI... ..	68	THE KHALIFA'S SCAFFOLDS	101
REMOVAL OF THE RAM	69	THE MAHDI'S TOMB, INTERIOR	101
PLAN OF HOLY MOUNTAIN	70	THE KHALIFA'S BLACK FLAG	101
TAHARQA'S QUEEN	71	" CARRIAGE... ..	102
TAHARQA WORSHIPPING	71	OMDURMAN. THE KHEDIVÉ'S VISIT (2	
SCULPTURES AT JEBEL BARKAL	72	scenes)	103
CHAPTER VII.		SHILLUK WAR DANCE (2 scenes) ...	103
ABU HAMED TO KHARTOUM.		OMDURMAN OF TO-DAY, THE GROCER ...	104
TOO LATE! SIR HERBERT STEWART		" " (4 scenes)	105
WOUNDED	73	" " A RELIGIOUS PRO-	
COUNT GLEICHEN—PORTRAIT	75	CESSION	106
KLIPPSPRINGER, SUAKIN	76	OMDURMAN OF TO-DAY, OX FROM WHITE	
SAKIA... ..	77	NILE	106
SIR ARCHIBALD HUNTER—PORTRAIT ...	78	OMDURMAN OF TO-DAY (4 scenes) ...	107
RAPIDS NEAR ABU HAMED	79	SIR RUDOLF VON SLATIN	108
NILE NEAR SHENDI (2 views)	79	MAP OF KHARTOUM AND OMDURMAN ...	109
BERBER	79	OMDURMAN OF TO-DAY CAMEL FAIR ...	110
ATBARA IN FLOOD	80	" " SHEEP MARKET	110
ADVANCE TO OMDURMAN, INTELLIGENCE		" " (4 scenes)... ..	111
WORK (4 scenes)	81	" " (4 scenes)... ..	112
DERVISH PRISONERS, BATTLE OF ATBARA	82	NATIVE TYPES OF HAIRDRESSING (4 styles)	113
ADVANCE TO OMDURMAN (4 scenes) ...	83	OMDURMAN, THE GRAIN MARKET... ..	114
METEMMA, PALM GROVES	84	KHARTOUM FIRST AGRICULTURAL SHOW... ..	114
METEMMA, SHABLUKA (4 scenes)	85	CHAPTER IX.	
MR. LEIGH HUNT—PORTRAIT	86	KHARTOUM.	
SHABLUKA CATARACT (4 scenes)	87	GORDON MEMORIAL SERVICE	115
" DERVISH FORT... ..	88	SIR REGINALD WINGATE—PORTRAIT ...	117
CHAPTER VIII.		PALM GROVES, KHARTOUM	118
OMDURMAN.		JUNCTION OF WHITE AND BLUE NILES ...	119
MONUMENT TO 21ST LANCERS	89	GORDON'S PALACE RUINS	119
LIEUT. GRENFELL, THE SIRDAR, COL.		GORDON'S GARDEN	120
RHODES—PORTRAITS	90	HOISTING FLAGS AT KHARTOUM	120
		BARON VON TIEDEMANN, 1898	121
		SIR H. RAWLINSON, 1898	121
		COMMANDER KEPPEL, R.N., 1898... ..	121

LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS.

	PAGE.
COLONEL ROGERS, E.A., 1898	121
KHARTOUM, THE PALACE	122
" CLUB GARDENS	122
" 1898 (4 scenes)	123
BANK OF EGYPT, KHARTOUM	124
JAALIN AND OTHER NATIVES	124
MAP OF NEW KHARTOUM	125
CORRIDOR OF GORDON PALACE	126
GOVERNOR'S BODY-GUARD	126
SCENES AT THE PALACE (3 scenes)	127
THE LAMB IN THE PALACE GARDENS	127
GORDON'S STATUE IN LONDON	128
SCENES AT THE PALACE (4 scenes)	129
THE KING OF THE CRANES (2 scenes)	130
SCENES AT THE PALACE (4 scenes)	131
SHILLUK WARRIORS' SHAM FIGHT	132
THE LAMB FROM SOBA	132
LIEUT.-COL. STANTON—PORTRAIT	133
CAPT. THE HON. C. JAMES—PORTRAIT	133
THE ZOOLOGICAL GARDENS... ..	134
THE MOSQUE, KHARTOUM	134
KHARTOUM, "GORDON'S TREE"	135
" HALFAYA	135
" RIVER SCENE	135
" THE WAR OFFICE	135
FAIR AT NATIVE VILLAGES	136
WEEKLY WASH	136
KHARTOUM (4 scenes)	137
THE GORDON COLLEGE	138
THE JEWELLER	139
SOBA, RUINS OF CITY (4 scenes)	140
" REST-HOUSE	141
" INSCRIPTION ON RAM	142
" RUINS OF CHRISTIAN CHURCH	142
FATHER OHRWALDER—PORTRAIT	143

CHAPTER X.

THE ISLAND OF MEROË.

TEMPLE IN CLASSIC STYLE, NAGA	145
CARVED BLOCK AT NAGA	146
MAP OF MEROË PYRAMIDS... ..	147
GREAT PYRAMID, MEROË	148
SOUTHERN PYRAMIDS, MEROË	148
GREAT GROUP PYRAMIDS, MEROË... ..	149
GENERAL VIEW, PYRAMIDS, MEROË	149
PYRAMIDS NEAR THE NILE... ..	149
ETHIOPIAN KING	150
CARTOUCHE OF QUEEN KANDAKE	150
PRESENT STATE OF PYRAMIDS (4 scenes)	151
SOUTHERN GROUP OF PYRAMIDS	152
PYRAMID WITH TEMPLE	152
JEWELLERY FOUND BY FERLINI	153

	PAGE.
"THE STOUT QUEEN," MEROË	154
JEWELLERY FROM MEROË	154
SCULPTURE AT SUFRA	154
JEWELLERY AT BERLIN	155
RUINS AT BAN NAGA	156
RUINS AT NAGA, EASTERN TEMPLE	157
" WESTERN TEMPLE	157
ALTAR FROM BAN NAGA	158
NAGA, 4 SCENES FROM TEMPLE	159
MEROË, SCENE FROM PYRAMID	160
NAGA, SCENE FROM TEMPLE	160
" THE WESTERN TEMPLE	161
" GREAT TEMPLE	161
" COLOSSAL SHEEP	162
MESSAURAT, TEMPLE	163
" CENTRAL TEMPLE	164
WADI EL SUFRA, GENERAL VIEW	165
" TEMPLE	165
" COLUMN	166

CHAPTER XI.

FASHODA—THE DEATH OF THE KHALIFA.

TROOPS MARCHING TO HOIST THE FLAG... ..	167
DINKA VILLAGE	168
FASHODA EXPEDITION (4 scenes)	169
MARCHAND MOUNTING THE DECK	170
FASHODA EXPEDITION (4 scenes)	171
MARCHAND COMING TO VISIT THE SIRDAR	172
CAPTURE OF DERVISH STEAMERS (4 scenes)	173
BAND PLAYING TO SHILLUKS	174
M. MARCHAND—PORTRAIT	174
DEATH OF KHALIFA—RETURN	175
EMIR, FORMERLY GOVERNOR OF DONGOLA	176
IN CAMP	176
KHALIFA EXPEDITION (4 scenes)	177
" AFTER THE ACTION	178
" THE DEAD KHALIFA	178
AND HIS EMIRS (4 scenes)	179
THE KHALIFA'S GIBBA	180
THE KHALIFA EXPEDITION (4 scenes)	181
ONE OF THE SUDAN DEVELOPMENT COM- PANY'S STEAMERS	182

CHAPTER XII.

THE CONQUEST OF THE SUDD.

LIEUT.-COL. MALCOLM PEAKE—PORTRAIT	183
THE SUDD—PAPYRUS	184
" CUTTING A TRENCH	186

OUR SUDAN; ITS PYRAMIDS AND PROGRESS.

	PAGE.
THE SUDD—STREAMER HAULING	187
„ BURNING THE SUDD	188
„ (4 scenes)	189
„ (4 scenes)	191
„ (4 scenes)	193
LORD CROMER'S VISIT TO GONDOKORO—	
WOOD SUPPLIES	195
AMERICAN MISSION	195
BARIS	195
GONDOKORO	195
AT FACHI SHOYA	197
DOM PALMS, LUL	197
FASHODA... ..	197
SHILLUK WARRIORS	197
„ WAR DANCE	199
„ AFTER THE DANCE	199
„ WAR DANCE... ..	199
„ DINKAS AT LUL	199
SHILLUKS AT LUL	200
GRASS FIRES	201
THE SUDD (2 views)	201
BELGIAN STATION, LADO	201
DINKAS AT LUL	202
LANDING PLACE AT RENK (2 views)	204
DINKA CATTLE AT RENK	204
WOOD STATION... ..	204
MAJOR WATSON, SIR R. SLATIN	205
EL DUEIM, CAMELS RESTING... ..	206
DINKAS, SHILLUKS AND NUERS (4 scenes)	207
JEBELEIN	208
SHILLUK CATTLE, WAU	208
KAKA, WHITE NILE	209
MELUT, WHITE NILE	209
KODOK AND BAZAAR (2 scenes)	209
GRASS FIRES	210
DER EL AHAMDA	210
SHILLUKS (4 scenes)	211
AMERICAN SCHOOL, DOLEIB HILL	212
SIR R. SLATIN, MAJOR MARKHAM	213
A HALT IN THE SUDD	213
JEBEL ILLIRI, SHILLUKS FISHING	213
RIVER BARO	214
ITANG VILLAGE... ..	215
ANUAK GIRLS, RIVER SOBAT... ..	216
NEAR MONGALLA	218

CHAPTER XIII.

SIR W. GARSTIN'S NEW CANAL

MONGALLA	219
SIR W. E. GARSTIN—PORTRAIT	221

	PAGE.
MAP OF PROPOSED CANAL	222
TAUFIKIA	223
BOR	224
VICTORIA NYANZA, RIPON FALLS... ..	225
BAHR EL ZERAF	226
SHILLUKS FISHING	226
INSPECTION AT TAUFIKIA	227
TONGA, SHILLUKS (2 scenes)	227
LAKE NO	227
THE BAHR EL GHAZAL	228
FLOATING SUDD	228
SUDD AND AMBACH (2 scenes)	229
VILLAGE IN THE SUDD (2 scenes)... ..	229
FLOATING SUDD	230
„ ISLAND BREAKING OFF... ..	230
SHAMBÉ, DINKAS	231
BARI VILLAGES (3 scenes)	231
NUER FISHING HUTS	232
HERDS OF DINKA CATTLE	232
DENSE GROWTH OF SUDD	233
NATIVES AT KENISA	233
BARIS AND THEIR HUTS (2 scenes)	233
THE SUDD UNCONQUERED	234
DINKA CATTLE	234
FOUR NATIVE SCENES AT KENISA	235
BOR	236
BARIS NEAR BOR	236
MONGALLA, LADO AND KIRO (4 scenes)	237
BARI HUTS	238
JEBEL LADO	238
JEBEL LADO FROM THE SUDD	239
SHEIKH OF LADO	239
DINKA CHILDREN, SHAMBÉ... ..	239
BARI HUTS	239
KIRO	240
MONGALLA (3 views)	241
THE AFRICAN RIFLES, GONDOKORO	241
MONGALLA	242
LADO	242
KIRO, LADO, MONGALLA (4 scenes)	243
LADO, LORD CROMER'S VISIT (2 scenes)	244
MONGALLA AND LADO (4 scenes)	245
REJAF	246
RECEPTION IN BELGIAN TERRITORY (2 views)	247
THE SUDAN AT GONDOKORO	247
GONDOKORO	247
RIPON FALLS, VICTORIA NYANZA... ..	248
THE ALBERT NYANZA	249
GYASSA ON THE BLUE NILE	250

LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS.

	PAGE.		PAGE.
CHAPTER XIV.			
THE BLUE NILE AND MAJOR GWYNN'S FRONTIER SCENES.			
SIR RUDOLF VON SLATIN—PORTRAIT ...	251	FAMAKA (Major Gwynn)	277
TELEGRAPH EXPEDITION, 1898 (2 scenes)	252	GYASSA ON BLUE NILE ..	278
ABU HARAZ	252	JEBEL KEILI	278
VILLAGE GRAVEYARD	252	DINKA BOYS, LOWER SOBAT'	278
JUNCTION OF NILES, KHARTOUM	253	GIDAMI, MARKET	278
RUINS OF OLD SENNAR	254	NATIVE HOUSES, GUNIG ..	279
MOSQUE OF OLD SENNAR	254	" " " " " " " "	279
KAMLIN, BLUE NILE (3 scenes)	255	RIVER YABUS NEAR ROSEIRES ..	279
BROTHER SHEIKHS OF RUFAA	255	BURUNS NEAR FASHODA ..	279
STONE BOATS ON BLUE NILE	256	MAHOMET WAD HOJALI ..	280
GOVERNOR-GENERAL'S STEAMER ON BLUE NILE	256	"WOMBER" YEMBO	280
NATIVE RAFTS AND BOATS (4 scenes) ...	257	GALLAS AT GIDAMI	280
PRESENTING ARMS TO GOVERNOR-GENERAL	258	BENI SHANGUL PLATEAU ..	280
BOAT-BUILDING	258	BURUN VILLAGE	281
ROSEIRES (4 scenes)	259	RIVER DINDER	281
JUNCTION WITH RAHAD RIVER	260	NUERS, UPPER SOBAT ..	281
" DINDER RIVER	260	DINKA BOYS, UPPER SOBAT ..	281
WAD EL ABBAS (3 scenes)	261	NEAR ROSEIRES	282
KARKAJ	261	RIVER ATBARA NEAR GALLABAT ..	282
GEZIRA, WOMEN DANCING	262	RIVER DINDER IN EARLY FLOOD ..	282
" (4 scenes)	263	FLOCK ON THE ATBARA ..	282
MANAGIL, GEZIRA	264	CHAPTER XV.	
BLUE NILE NEAR SINGA	264	A VISIT TO ABYSSINIA.	
GEZIRA (4 scenes)	265	C. E. DUPUIS—PORTRAIT	283
GENERAL SIR LESLIE RUNDLE—PORTRAIT	266	MAP OF LAKE TSANA	284
KARKAJ, BLUE NILE (4 scenes)	267	FANTASIA, ABU HARAZ	285
COLONEL, FERGUSSON—PORTRAIT	268	"SHADY" TREE, HALT	285
ROSEIRES	268	RIVER RAHAD	286
SENNAR, GOV.-GEN.'S VISIT (3 scenes) ...	269	WEST SHORE, LAKE TSANA	286
BLUE NILE NEAR ABDIN	269	ON THE RAHAD (4 views)	287
FETISH-TREE, HILLET TISAGA	270	DRAWING WATER NEAR GEDAREF ...	288
COLONY OF OLD SOLDIERS (4 scenes) ...	271	CAMP NEAR GEDAREF	289
MARKET SCENE, GIDAMI	272	RIVER ATBARA NEAR GEDAREF ...	289
GALLABAT FROM THE FORT	272	DRAWING WATER AT GWERBE	290
SINGA, BLUE NILE (4 scenes)	273	SIRDAR'S PARTY EN ROUTE	291
JEBEL MENZA ... (Major Gwynn)	274	" ACACIA FOREST	291
" METONGWA	274	WATERING CAMELS AT DOKA	292
GALLAS, GIDAMI	275	ROAD FROM GALLABAT TO LAKE TSANA	293
HAMID WAKIL OF HOJALI ..	275	CAMP IN BAMBOO FOREST	293
HOJALI AND HIS STAFF ..	276	WATERFALL, RIVER ABAI	294
BAMBOO JUNGLE	276	BATTLEFIELD WHERE KING JOHN WAS	
BENI SHANGUL	276	KILLED	294
JEBEL KASSALA	276	CAMP AT SARA	295
RIVER PIBOR	277	HEAD PRIEST, KARATA	296
YABUS RIVER	277	REEDS AND PAPYRUS, LAKE TSANA ...	297
NEAR SINKAT	277	CROSSING RIVER ABAI	297
		LYCHGATE OF CHURCH	298
		BETWEEN ABU HARAZ AND GEDAREF	
		(4 scenes)	299

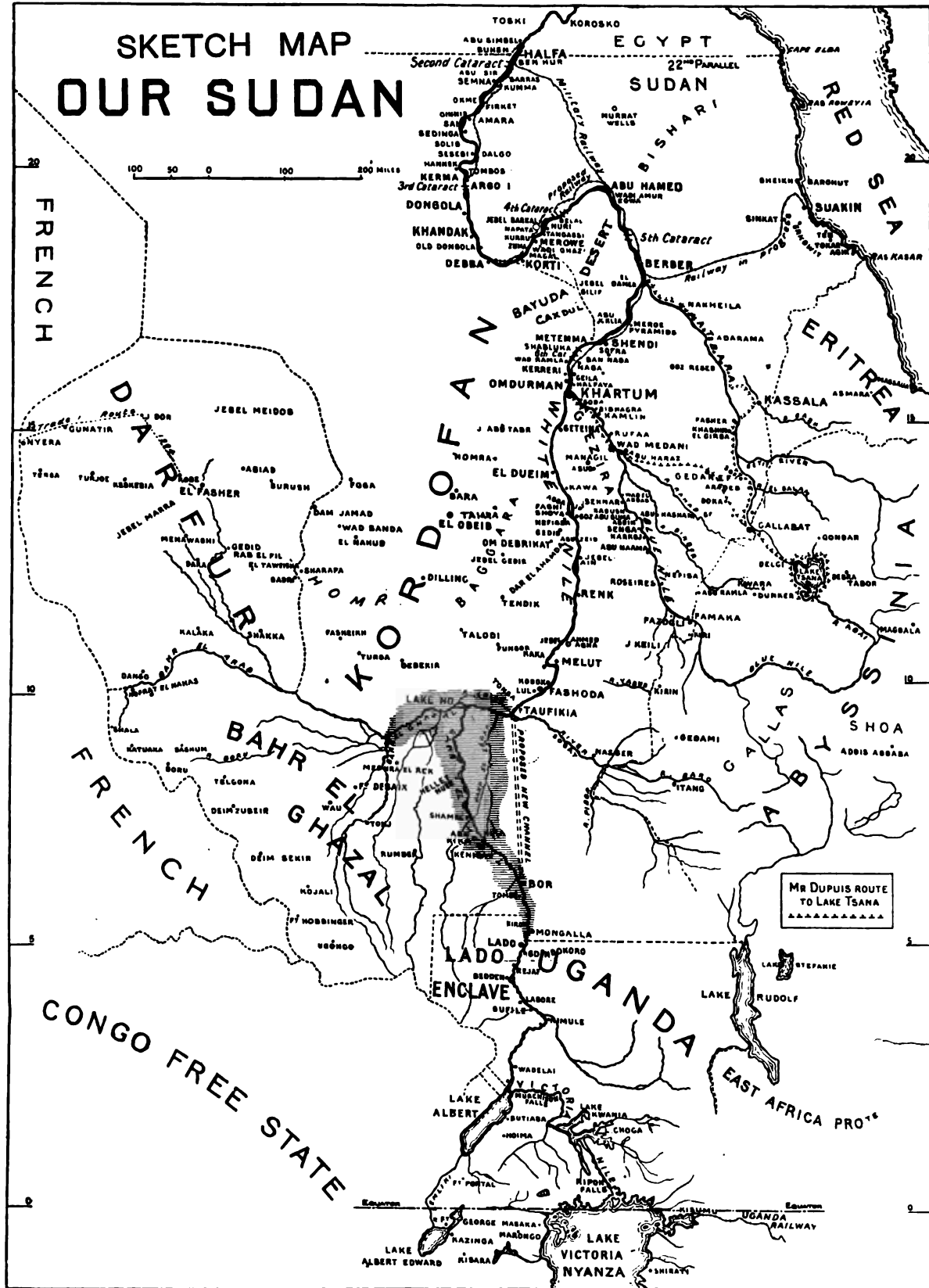
OUR SUDAN; ITS PYRAMIDS AND PROGRESS.

	PAGE.
ABAI RIVER	300
RIVER ATBARA (2 scenes)	301
KASSALA AND THE GASH (2 scenes)	301
ABYSSINIAN SOLDIER-GUIDE	302
NEAR DEBRA TABOR (3 scenes)	303
GANDWAHA RIVER	303
DELDI TOLL HOUSE	304
OLD PORTUGUESE BRIDGE	305
OUTLET, LAKE TSANA (2 scenes)	305
RUINED CHURCH, SIEDEVER	305
COFFEE PLANTATIONS, ZEGI	306
RIVER REB	306
VOLCANIC ROCKS	307
AT PETTY CHIEF'S HOUSE... ..	307
FORD ON THE ABAI... ..	307
HALT ON THE ATBARA	307
CANDELABRUM EUPHORBIA... ..	308
RELIGIOUS CEREMONY, DEBRA TABOR	309
CAMP AT SARA	309
RIVER ABAI (2 scenes)	309
RIVER ATBARA (2 scenes)	310
KORATSA VILLAGE (2 scenes)	311
THE DOCTOR FISHING IN ABAI	311
CAMP AT WOREB	311
JUNCTION OF ATBARA AND SETTIT	312
ATBARA (KASSALA AND BERBER ROAD)... ..	312
ZEGI, MARKET AND CHURCH (2 scenes)	313
CROSSING THE ABAI	313
BELFRY HOUSE OF CHURCH, KORATSA	313
KASSALA	314
ROCKS AT GOZ REJEH (2 scenes)	316, 314
GALLABAT ROAD (3 scenes)	315
ROCKY GORGE, ATBARA	315
NATIVES AT KASSALA	317
ARADEB, RIVER ATBARA	317
SCENES ON THE GEDAREF ROAD (2 views)	317
DOM PALMS, ATBARA	318
JUNCTION OF ATBARA AND NILE... ..	318
RIVER ATBARA (3 scenes)	319
CAMP ON THE ATBARA	319
KASSALA	320
SUAKIN-BERBER RAILWAY BEGUN (2 scenes)	322, 320
SCENES NEAR GALLABAT AND GEDAREF (4 views)	321
SCENES AT OR NEAR SUAKIN (3)	323
KASSALA—KADMIA... ..	323
THE SIRDAR EN ROUTE TO SUAKIN	324
ATBARA-SUAKIN RAILWAY (2 views)	325
KASSALA (2 views)	325
LIEUT.-COL. PENTON AND MAJOR FRIEND	326

	PAGE.
CHAPTER XVI.	
THE LAND OF "GUM ARABIC." KORDOFAN—DARFUR.	
NUR BEY ANGARA—PORTRAIT	327
GUM AT OMDURMAN	328
CAMEL DRINKING TROUGH... ..	328
EL OBEID (2 scenes)	328
DERVISH WIDOWS SORTING GUM	329
EL OBEID, CROWD WAITING	330
EN ROUTE TO EL OBEID (4 scenes)	331
CATTLE AT A DESERT WELL	332
EL OBEID ROAD (4 scenes)	333
FUNGOR, KORDOFAN... ..	334
CAMP ON THE ROAD	334
SCENES BY THE WAY (4)	335
GREATER BUSTARD	336
WOMEN AT EL OBEID	336
DANCING WOMEN (4 scenes)	337
EL OBEID BAZAARS AND INSPECTION (2 scenes)	338
EL OBEID NOTABLES, MUDIRIA (2 scenes)	338
LOADING UP: REVIEW (2 scenes)... ..	339
SLATIN READING ADDRESS TO SHEIKHS	341
NATIVE OFFICERS (2 views)	341
BIVOUCAC ON THE ROAD	341
KORDOFAN ARABS AND CHIEF	342

CHAPTER XVII.	
THE BAHR EL GHAZAL	
BALGENICEPS REX—PORTRAIT	343
HELLET EL NUER	344
THE BAHR EL GHAZAL	345
" BLOCKED BY SUDD	346
MOUTH OF RIVER ROHL	347
SULTAN N'DORMA	349
SULTAN TAMBURA	350
SCENES AT "LES RAPIDES" (3)	351
TRIBAL DANCE OF THE AJARS	351
SULTAN TAMBURA AND HIS MOTHER	352
NORTHERN DINKAS	353
RED-SKINNED JURIS	353
ATWOT CHIEF'S SON	353
ATWOT ARCHERS	353
ZUBEIR PASHA—PORTRAIT	355
" AT KHARTOUM	356
NILE FISH (<i>Lates Niloticus</i>)	362

SKETCH MAP OUR SUDAN



THE SHADING DENOTES THE SUDD REGION.



GORDON'S STEAMER "BORDEIN."

Originally a Thames Penny Post, this old craft did good service in Gordon's time,
and is still at work.

OUR SUDAN

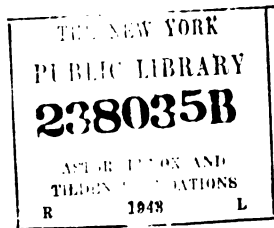
ITS PYRAMIDS AND PROGRESS

PRELIMINARY CHAPTER.



DEFEAT OF THE DERVISH ARMY SENT TO CONQUER CAIRO. TOSKI, 3RD AUGUST, 1889.
SIR F. GRENFELL (NOW LORD GRENFELL) DIRECTING THE ASSAULT.

PREPARATIONS FOR THE CAMPAIGN AGAINST THE MAHDI.
SIR EVELYN WOOD, LORD GRENFELL, SIR ARCHIBALD HUNTER.
THE BATTLE OF TOSKI NEAR ABU SIMBEL.
THE INTELLIGENCE DEPARTMENT: SIR REGINALD WINGATE, COUNT GLEICHEN.
LORD CROMER AND THE IRRIGATION PROJECTS OF SIR WILLIAM GARSTIN.



VILLAGE AFTER A DERVISH RAID.

OUR SUDAN; ITS PYRAMIDS AND PROGRESS.

PRELIMINARY CHAPTER.

THE earliest tourist records that he found Egypt not only a land of wonders, but a land of contradictions beyond all others. It is still so, after thousands of years. Here evil seems actually to produce good, and calamities are blessings in disguise.

The follies of its rulers could no farther go, the ancient land was apparently in hopeless ruin. This was in 1882, when Egypt fell into our hands, all unsought by us.

No other nation would have anything to do with it; it was derelict. We stuck to our task, pulled the old land out of the mire of insolvency, and taking away its reproach, made its rule a model of good government.

But ere we accomplished our task, the hero Gordon had been murdered by the people he was sent to save, and the Sudan was lost to Egypt. The frontier line was



COLOSSAL STATUES OF RAMESES II., ABU SIMBEL ON THE NILE, NEAR TOSEI.

withdrawn to Wadi Halfa in 1886. Two years before, Gordon had written these words, "If Egypt is to be quiet, the Mahdi must be smashed up." The relief column arrived too late to save him, but his words were not forgotten, and when Egypt had been put firmly under the honest government of Lord Cromer, preparations were commenced for the avenging of Gordon by the conquest of the Sudan. The first step was to create an army. Some of England's best soldiers were selected to train up and drill the natives—yellow and black—to fit them for being good soldiers. Sir Evelyn Wood was chosen (after the defeat of Arabi at Tel el Kebir

by Wolseley in 1882) to begin the formation of a new Egyptian force. This took time, but good results came sooner than was expected. The Mahdi was dead, his Khalifas were still active, and threatening to conquer Egypt itself. Wad el Negumi, one of the best Dervish generals, led 4,000 fighting men, and some 7,000 camp followers, past Wadi Halfa, by the western desert, with the avowed object of advancing on Cairo, and conquering the Christian World.

We had only a small garrison at Halfa. General Grenfell (now Lord Grenfell) was then Sirdar. British troops were on the way from Cairo, but Grenfell, finding the Dervish hosts making rapid progress northwards, hastened to stop their progress. He

had only two Egyptian and four Sudanese battalions, a troop of the 20th Hussars, and some artillery. By keeping the Dervishes away from the Nile, the multitude was helpless, suffering from thirst in the waterless desert. Grenfell trusted his men, and at Toski, near Abu Simbel, on 3rd August, 1889, led them against the enemy, who was utterly routed—practically destroyed.

The Gippies and Sudanese fought well, and the victory had such a fine moral effect that every native regiment has been found reliable ever since. Their fighting in the Sudan was equal to that of British troops. The Dervishes never attempted again to invade Egypt. The hopes of the Khalifa of conquering the world had come to an end.

Sir Archibald Hunter (now in high command in India) was a young officer under Sir Francis Grenfell at the Toski affair, where he was wounded. After the Toski collapse the Dervishes gave less trouble.



FIELD-MARSHAL SIR EVELYN WOOD, G.C.B.

Father Ohrwalder escaped from prison at Omdurman in 1891, and Slatin Bey in 1895, through the efforts of Sir Reginald Wingate's clever Intelligence Department. They brought valuable tidings of Dervish doings, and helped Sir Herbert Kitchener greatly in his preparations for the campaign for the "smashing of the Mahdi."

The history of this war has been told by abler pens than mine. The present volume is only an attempt to describe the vast region we have conquered and been called upon to develop, or to bring back to civilisation. Incidents of the campaign or historical events are only mentioned where they serve to illustrate the localities described or depicted.

“Our Sudan” is almost as large as Europe, and possesses nearly as many nationalities. Compared to its extent, Egypt is a mere strip of land along the Nile. Dervish cruelty has depopulated our new empire, but under the beneficent British flag, the prolific races of the Sudan will multiply and develop into industrious agriculturists, peaceful handicraftsmen, and happy, contented peoples.

During visits to this region, and while compiling the information about the remote provinces, I have been struck with the great extent and variety of their physical characteristics. I have been also surprised to find that what was labelled “desert” in the maps frequently proves to be fertile land. Much of this was once cultivated, when there was an immense population. This land can be tilled again, when supplied with irrigation.

Sir William Garstin has just presented to Lord Cromer a Report of some 250 foolscap pages on the resources of the waters of the Nile for the irrigation of Egypt and the Sudan. This Report is a very remarkable work; but it is too technical, and too extensive, for publication here. However, Lord Cromer’s Despatch on this subject is not too large to copy in full into these pages, and it forms an admirable *résumé* of the entire subject.

It will be seen that Lord Cromer promises to give all that is demanded, even to the extent of Twenty-one millions sterling, over a number of years, provided that this outlay is really needed, and agrees to give the £24,000 a year for the necessary preliminary surveys.

Lord Cromer also alludes to his anxiety for the railway development of the Sudan. The Suakin railway is much needed, is far advanced, and will be ready in a year.

Coal at present is £6 a ton at Khartoum. No coal, it is much to be feared, exists in the Sudan. Some inflammable oil has been seen bubbling up, but it is not true petroleum. Coal and also mineral oils are a necessity and must therefore be imported. The Suakin railway will bring these to Khartoum for one-half the cost of railway transit from Alexandria or Port Said.

The Berber-Suakin railway will also convey cotton, dura, gum, and all the products of the Sudan to the world’s markets at moderate rates.



LORD GRENFELL, G.C.B., F.S.A.

Railway extension to Gedaref and Kassala is suggested, and Lord Cromer mentions proposed lines from Omdurman to Kordofan and from Khartoum to Wad Medani on the Blue Nile. A line is promised from Abu Hamed to Dongola. This last is peculiarly gratifying to people of antiquarian tastes, for most of the old cities and antiquities are found along the Nile at inaccessible places away from any road or railway. Once made accessible, these localities will bring in revenue by the issue of tickets to tourists, as is done in Egypt. The Government have begun to build Rest-houses at the ancient sites, while a Museum has been commenced at Khartoum, and soon no doubt a Sudanese Antiquarian Department will be organised.

The land of many parts of the Sudan is admirably adapted for cotton culture. Companies to work plantations are being encouraged, and it is said by experts that when Irrigation is given, there can be enough cotton produced to supply all the English demand. The only difficulty is the absence of population.

Sir William Garstin deserves the thanks of the country for his lucid report on the Nile supplies. The great river and its feeders are the life-blood of the whole region from the Equator to the Mediterranean. There is no doubt, from Sir William Garstin's Report, that the supply of water can be greatly increased and utilised for both the Sudan and for Egypt.

This book is written for people who may have the idea of visiting Khartoum and the Upper Nile. It is also written with the object of attracting notice to the Sudan, as yet virtually an unknown land to the English people.

When I applied to my friends of the Government Departments at Cairo and Khartoum for photographs of regions I had been unable to visit myself, I was almost overwhelmed with their kindness, so many excellent photographs were sent me. I thought to make a selection, but all were so good and many were so curious, representing places never depicted before, that I said, "Let them all come." The advice I give to people studying this book is "Skip the letterpress, the pictures will teach you all you need to know."

The Nile is actually the origin of Egypt. Herodotus knew this, and aptly called Egypt the "Gift of the Nile." Egypt is rainless, and only the farthest Sudan has its rainy season, consequently anything relating to the amplification of the storage of the Nile, is all-important for both countries, and the Irrigation Department becomes the most important public office in everything connected with the Nile Valley. In Egypt, to quote a late writer in the *Times*, the Constellation Aquarius contains stars of the very first magnitude. Sir William Garstin is the "bright particular star" of that constellation, and his masterly Report on the Nile, of the year 1904 is perhaps the finest of its kind ever issued. The Despatch of Lord Cromer contains its essence, and what is

more, approves of all the Garstin recommendations. This wonderful analysis by the master mind of Egypt is placed at the front of the volume, as owing to its importance it deserves the place of honour.

Lord Cromer's training has shown itself in the men who, after serving Egypt, have made their mark elsewhere, Lord Milner, Lord Kitchener, those already named, and hosts of others. Fortunately when war is past, peaceful men like Sir Reginald Wingate and Count Gleichen have to remain longer to consolidate good government. Wingate's "underground railway" laid the plans for developing the Sudan while yet in Dervish hands. Count Gleichen showed himself an able pupil in carrying on the work of the Intelligence Department.



HISTORY REPEATS ITSELF ! TWO COMPANIES OF SOLDIERS RAISED BY A GENERAL OF
FIVE THOUSAND YEARS AGO FOR SUDANESE WARFARE.

One is of black men, armed exactly as certain tribes in the Bahr el Ghazal to-day, the other consists of natives of lighter colour, their spears and shields such as used by the Dervishes recently.

(From a Tomb of the Old Empire at Mér, near Assiout. Now in Cairo Museum.)

Count Gleichen's interesting Sudan Handbooks taught our soldiers, from 1896 to 1899, where to go and what to expect in an utterly unknown land. Every important text-book for the Sudan, for the past ten years, bears this young officer's name. Of course a soldier has to go where he is sent, and after active service in South Africa, he has now left Egypt. His *Anglo-Egyptian Sudan* is a great work which was much needed and will be a monument to his fame.

His labours in Egypt as Intelligence Officer may have been supposed to be completed when he was ordered elsewhere. We shall yet have more works from his pen, it is to be hoped, relating to the Nile Valley, the region he knows better than any other writer.

The Hon. Colonel Talbot and Gwynn Bey, in the interesting Reports accompanying the Survey of the Sudan, are completing the descriptive work begun by Count Gleichen. Major Gwynn's photographs, giving illustrations of border peoples never before depicted, are most interesting.

It is possible that Sir William Garstin's scheme for cutting a great Nile Canal, may entirely solve the Sudd problem. If successful, it will revolutionize Egyptian Irrigation. Mr. Dupuis provides us with tidings of Abyssinia, such as have not been received since the days of Bruce, while his beautiful photographs give us pictorial illustrations of a hitherto unknown country and its interesting people. His descriptions of the scenery are most graphic and give a vivid idea of his adventurous journey.

The Annual Inspection of remote provinces by the Governor-General has a civilising influence of great importance. The photographs of these progresses of Sir Reginald Wingate tell their own tale. Everywhere he is welcomed by happy faces, and hailed by chiefs and sheikhs, by headmen and village people, especially by the female population, as their deliverer.

The photographs of the natives of Kordofan are most interesting. Schweinfurth was afraid to venture there only some thirty-five years ago ("Darfur and Kordofan are the hiding-place of every murderer and malefactor in Central Africa," says Schweinfurth in his *Heart of Africa*). The dear old man still lives, and looks like living. He is hale and hearty: I saw him in Cairo in 1904; how surprised he will be to see those photographs. The remotest provinces are being gradually brought under the influence of the genial Sirdar. Darfur will come next. At present it is impossible to get a single illustration of that region.

The Bahr el Ghazal will follow in the path of civilisation. Of the Niam Niam, and of its Pigmies as well, Sir Reginald has sent me a number of excellent photographs showing much character. When this race give up their unpleasant gastronomic tendencies they seem physically to be the finest race in Central Africa. They assert that they are not now cannibals; let us hope they may stick to their new principles.

I was much struck, in visiting the Sudan, by the unexpected number of ruins of Pyramids, Temples and Cities of 2,000 to 5,000 years ago, and the vestiges of Christian edifices, which, before the days of Islam, extended all over the land. I have collected illustrations of these antiquarian remains, hoping to awaken an interest in the ancient civilisation of this land of which, though it has accidentally come under the influence of the Pax Britannica, we as yet know little.

The travels of Caillaud (1825), Hoskins (1835), and Lepsius (1845) have served to supply many illustrations and descriptions of antiquities which have been seldom or never visited by antiquarians since their times.

OUR SUDAN ; ITS PYRAMIDS AND PROGRESS.

CHAPTER II.

LORD CROMER'S DESPATCH, EGYPT, No. 2, 1904.



SUDAN GOVERNMENT STEAMER "IBIS" READY TO START, UPPER NILE, SHELLAL TO WADI HALFA.

LORD CROMER'S ANALYSIS AND DECISION REGARDING SIR WILLIAM GARSTIN'S
REPORTS ON IRRIGATION, 1904.
RAILWAY DEVELOPMENT IN THE SUDAN.



Kitchener



Ermer



A PASTORAL.

Hon. C. James.

OUR SUDAN; ITS PYRAMIDS AND PROGRESS.

CHAPTER II.

LORD CROMER'S DESPATCH,

ENCLOSING SIR WILLIAM GARSTIN'S REPORT ON THE UPPER NILE IRRIGATION PROJECTS, 1904.

The Earl of Cromer to the Marquess of Lansdowne.—(Received 2nd May.)
Cairo, 22nd April, 1904.

MY LORD,

It will be within your Lordship's recollection that on the 19th June, 1901, I forwarded a Report prepared by Sir William Garstin on the Upper Nile irrigation projects (*see* "Egypt No. 2, 1901"). Sir William Garstin did not at that time make any definite proposals; he merely indicated the direction which further inquiry might advantageously take.

Since 1901 Sir William Garstin has made a prolonged tour in the Upper Nile region. He has embodied the information he was able to obtain in a further Report, which I have now the honour to inclose. It is a document of the highest interest and value. I beg to draw your Lordship's attention more especially to Appendix I.

At my request Sir William Garstin drew up a rough sketch of the irrigation programme which might possibly be adopted in the future. It must be borne in mind that in each of the cases mentioned by Sir William Garstin the financial, and in most cases the engineering, features of the particular proposals require further study. The figures must, therefore, only be regarded as very approximative.

I have no hesitation in saying that Sir William Garstin's programme may safely be adopted in the following sense—that the aim of the Egyptian Government should be to work gradually up to the execution of the schemes which he proposes. The main question to be decided is, what portions of the general plan require relatively early treatment, and what portions, on the other hand, can be left for future consideration.

Sir William Garstin works out to an estimated expenditure of £ E. 21,400,000, of which £ E. 13,000,000 would be in the Sudan and £ E. 8,400,000 in Egypt.

It is not to be thought that the proposed expenditure in the Sudan will only benefit that country. Such is far from being the case. The main item is £ E. 5,500,000 for works on the Bahr-el-Gebel. This expenditure is almost entirely on Egyptian account. Broadly speaking, I may say that the whole plan is based on the principle of utilising the waters of the White Nile for the benefit of Egypt, and those of the Blue Nile for the benefit of the Sudan.

Sir William Garstin remarks:—"There could, of course, be no question of carrying out such a programme in any very short space of time. In fact, even if the money were available, it is scarcely possible that these works could be executed under a period of ten to fifteen years, under the most favourable circumstances."

Your Lordship will observe that Sir William Garstin proposes to employ an additional staff in order to study the various projects to which he alludes. This is the only point which requires an early decision. The cost will be £ E. 24,000 for the first year. The money will be granted. A more difficult question is to find the right men for the work. This matter will be left in Sir William Garstin's hands.

In my last annual Report, under the head of "The Egyptian Debt," I stated what sums might possibly be made available, in the near future, to be applied to capital expenditure. I may now, perhaps, go a step further and state what are the projects which would appear to stand first in order of importance.

As regards Egypt, the first thing to do is evidently to provide the money for converting the lands of Middle Egypt from basin into perennial irrigation. About £ E. 600,000 will be spent during the current year on attaining this object. A further sum of about £ E. 1,000,000 will have to be provided in future years. When this money has been spent, the whole of the programme comprised in the construction, at its present level, of the Assouan and also of the Assiout dam will be completed.

Next in importance I place the necessity of providing a considerable sum of money—probably about £ E. 3,000,000—to place the Egyptian railways in thorough order.

Turning to irrigation, the first new work which, I venture to think, should be undertaken is the raising of the Assouan dam. This would cost about £ E. 500,000.

It may, perhaps, be possible to deal simultaneously with the remodelling of the Rosetta and Damietta branches, the roughly estimated cost of which is £ E. 900,000.

It would not, in any case, be possible to begin work at either of these last-named projects at once. Both require further examination.

It will be seen that this programme involves a capital expenditure of £ E. 5,400,000, namely:—

	£ E.
Middle Egypt canals	1,000,000
Railways (extending probably over some years) ...	3,000,000
Raising Assouan dam	500,000
Remodelling Rosetta and Damietta branches...	900,000
<hr/>	
Total	5,400,000

It is, probably, not necessary at present to form even an approximate programme for a more remote future, but I may say that the works contemplated by Sir William Garstin on the Bahr-el-Gebel would appear to come next in importance. Indeed, as Sir William Garstin has pointed out, the execution of these works forms a necessary portion of the schemes of which the raising of the Assouan dam and the remodelling of the Rosetta and Damietta branches constitute a part.

As regards the Bahr-el-Gebel works themselves, Sir William Garstin puts forward two alternatives, namely, either to construct an entirely new channel for the Nile between Bor and the Sobat, or to improve the Bahr-el-Zeraf. The former project would possibly cost £ E. 5,500,000, the latter £ E. 3,400,000. Both estimates must be considered as approximations of the very roughest description. I have no hesitation in expressing an

opinion that, should the former of these two projects be found capable of execution, it should be adopted in preference to the latter, in spite of the extra cost. But no opinion can be formed on this subject until the levels have been taken and the matter more fully examined.

The remaining projects to be executed, either in Egypt or for the special benefit of Egypt in the Sudan, are :—

	£ E.
Regulation of the lakes... ..	2,000,000
Barrages between Assiout and Keneh... ..	2,000,000
Conversion of Upper Egypt basins	5,000,000
Total	9,000,000

The consideration of these projects may for the present be postponed.

It has to be borne in mind that, in addition to the expenditure on irrigation, very considerable sums of money would have to be spent on drainage. All experience has shown that drainage must advance *pari passu* with irrigation.

Sir William Garstin estimates that when the whole of his Egyptian project is carried out 750,000 acres of land will be converted from basin into perennial irrigation; 100,000 acres will be made capable of being irrigated by pumps; 800,000 additional acres will be brought under cultivation; and that, at very moderate rates, the increased revenue to be derived from taxation will be £ E. 1,205,000 a year.

I now turn to such works as are intended more especially to benefit the Sudan.

The first point manifestly is to complete the Suakin-Berber Railway, now in course of construction. It will cost about £ E. 1,750,000. I shall be disappointed if it is not finished by the spring of 1906.

Next in order of importance I should be inclined to place the Gash project, the execution of which need not await the completion of the Suakin-Berber Railway. It is roughly estimated to cost £ E. 500,000. About 100,000 acres will be brought under cultivation. Assessing the land tax at P. T. 50 an acre, the increased revenue would amount to £ E. 50,000. Should the engineers, after further inquiry, report favourably on this project, I should be disposed to recommend that it be taken in hand so soon as the money can be provided.

The remaining Sudan irrigation projects mentioned by Sir William Garstin are :—

	£ E.
Reservoir at Rosaires ¹	2,000,000
Barrage on the Blue Nile ¹	1,000,000
Ghezireh Canal system... ..	2,000,000
Total	5,000,000

I am inclined to think that the expenditure of capital on improving the railway communications of the Sudan should take precedence of the execution of any of these projects.

¹ In spite of the engineering advantages to be obtained by the adoption of the Lake Tsana project, I am of opinion that, on political grounds, the alternative plan mentioned above is to be preferred.

My main reason for holding this opinion is that the construction of a railway up the Blue Nile, at all events, so far as Wad Medani, will greatly facilitate, and also cheapen, the construction of a barrage on the Blue Nile, and of a reservoir at Rosaires.

I should add that in all these Sudan projects the question of whether the population requisite to cultivate any new lands will be forthcoming is a very doubtful factor.

Besides a railway to Wad Medani, it is very desirable to construct a line along the proper right bank of the Nile from the neighbourhood of Dongola to Abu Hamed. I have stated in my last Annual Report that the line from Kerma to Wadi Halfa is about to be closed.

Further, a line to connect El Obeid with the Nile is much required, both on military grounds and also in order to enable the Kordofan gum to find a market.

I cannot give the figures in connection with these three railway projects, as no estimates have as yet been made.

Your Lordship will observe that Sir William Garstin estimates that, when the whole of his scheme is completed, 1,000,000 acres in the Sudan will be brought under cultivation, and that the direct return in the shape of land tax, at P. T. 50 an acre, would be £ E. 500,000 a year. The whole, or at all events the greater part, of this money would, of course, be utilised to diminish the Egyptian contribution now paid annually to the Sudan Government. In fact, the only hope of rendering the Sudan ultimately self-supporting lies in the judicious expenditure of capital on railways and irrigation.

To sum up, all that it is proposed to do for the moment is to spend £ E. 24,000 a year on the employment of a competent staff to examine more closely into some of the various projects to which Sir William Garstin has directed attention.

Subject to any changes which the result of further inquiry may necessitate, an attempt will be made in the relatively near future to carry out an Egyptian railway and irrigation programme, involving a capital expenditure of £ E. 5,400,000. This programme will involve raising the Assouan dam and remodelling the Rosetta and Damietta branches of the Nile.

In the Sudan, subject to the same conditions as in the case of Egypt, an attempt will be made to undertake the Gash project, and, in due time—that is to say, when the Suakin-Berber Railway is completed—to still further improve the railway communication.

This general programme is quite sufficiently ambitious for the present. It will, by itself, take some time to execute. As events develop, and as further information—both technical and financial—is obtained, it will be capable of modification, and possibly of extension.

As to when the capital will be forthcoming, and in what amounts it will be available, I can say nothing very positive at present. A good deal will depend on the ultimate results of the international negotiations now in progress.

I cannot close this despatch without recording my opinion that all interested in Egyptian affairs owe a deep debt of gratitude to Sir William Garstin for the care and the conspicuous talent with which he has treated this very important question.

I have, &c.,

(Signed)

CROMER.

OUR SUDAN; ITS PYRAMIDS AND PROGRESS.

CHAPTER III.

WADI HALFA TO KHARTOUM BY RAILWAY.



THE SUDAN EXPRESS.

Major Phipps.

WADI HALFA, SIR PERCY GIROUARD,
ABU HAMED, BATHS, PROPOSED RAILWAY TO DONGOLA, WADI AMUR, BERBER, EL DAMER,
THE ATBARA, SHENDI, PYRAMIDS OF MEROË, BAN NAGA,
HALFAYA, KHARTOUM.

NOTE.

It may seem somewhat puzzling to the reader to notice several chapters with titles almost similar. But a glance at the Map will explain this. The modern highway to Khartoum leads as direct as it was possible to make the railway for military purposes. This is described in Chapter III. But as all the old and most of the modern cities are found along the Nile, the ancient highway, these are described in Chapters IV., V., VI., VII., and VIII.

In Chapter IX. Khartoum is reached by the ancient route.

CHAPTER III.

WADI HALFA TO ABU HAMED BY RAILWAY.

THE journey from Cairo to Assuan and the First Cataract and along the river to Halfa, has been fully described and illustrated in the author's companion volume, *Egypt ; its Pyramids and Progress*.

The frontier line between Egypt and the Anglo-Egyptian Sudan is at the twenty-second parallel of latitude. The Express Mail Steamers for the Sudan start above the Assuan Reservoir and convey the passengers by the Nile as far as Wadi Halfa. Tickets are obtainable at Cairo, Luxor, or Assuan. The express train for Khartoum goes right through from Halfa, at present only

stopping at Abu Hamed, Berber, Shendi, and at the last station, opposite Khartoum.

As every holder of a ticket from Cairo to Khartoum can only travel by the military railway from Halfa onward, it will be well to make that journey first in order in the volume.

Let us, therefore, take the ordinary route from Wadi Halfa to



RAILWAY MATERIAL FOR THE SUDAN, SHELLAL.

Major Phipps.

Khartoum, by the military railway, through the desert to Abu Hamed. The greater part of the journey is made at night, to avoid the burning arid waste of 230 miles in the worst bit of desert, perhaps, in Africa; certainly the worst that now has an admirably appointed *train-de-luxe* traversing it. It is hard to believe that not many years ago an entire caravan from Korosko perished in a sand storm in attempting to cross it. When Lepsius travelled to the Sudan, in 1840, he took eight days from Korosko to Abu Hamed, though he had every appliance for safe and rapid travelling across the desert.



LIEUT.-COL. SIR E. P. GIROUARD, K.C.M.G.,
D.S.O., R.E.

The railway was a necessity of Lord Kitchener's campaign, or it would never have been placed across an utterly unproductive, hideous desert. Some day, perhaps, its course may be altered, and the trunk-line carried through a populous, or at least a fertile region.

This line was Sir Percy Girouard's greatest engineering feat; it was laid at the rate of upwards of a mile a day, one day 5,200 yards were laid. It was completed on December 31st, 1897. It was a bold scheme and splendidly carried out.

Time was everything, the Dervishes had to be struck quickly and surely, and the master mind of Kitchener, keenly alive to all the failures in transport arrangements of the past, determined that there should, this time, be "no such word as fail." In Girouard the great general found the man he wanted, as he

always did find the man to carry out every detail of his splendidly conceived campaign.

Every train has to carry 9,500 gallons of water for its own consumption in traversing the waterless desert, which is a great tax on its usefulness. There are "stations" through the desert, "Nos. 1 to 9," with loops to allow trains to pass; photographs are given of some of these lonely posts.

There are often wonderful mirages seen from this desert railway.

I once saw a marvellous scene on the eastern side at early morning — palm groves, lakes, with flocks of white pelicans on their



WADI HALFA : RAILWAY WORKSHOPS.

Midwinter Bx.

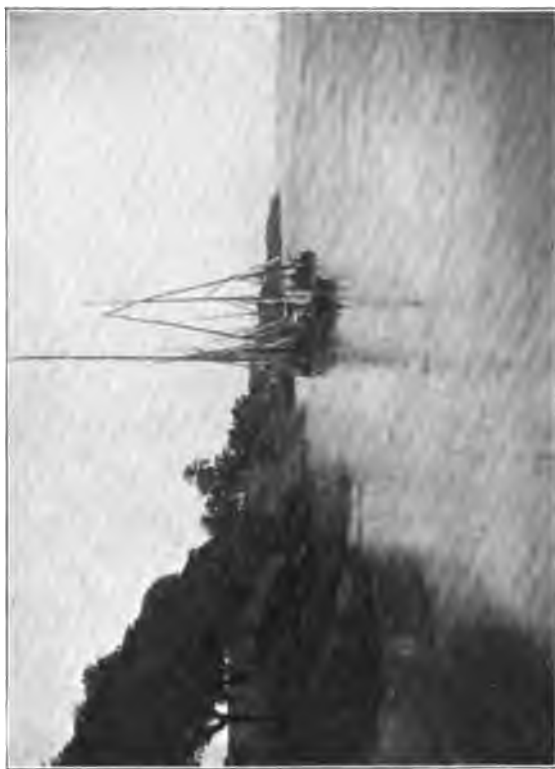


Lt.-Col. Penton.

THE NILE NEAR WADI HALFA.



WADI HALFA : RIVER FORESHORE.



THE NILE AT HALFA.

margins, and strings of camels winding along a desert track. It remained some time, and I proceeded to sketch it—when lo! it vanished. There was no such thing—nothing of the kind between us and the Red Sea, 400 miles away.

Abu Hamed has lost its ancient importance as a place of meeting of the caravans from Korosko by Murrat Wells. There are no supplies to be had at Abu Hamed, and were it not for the desert railway station its very name would never now be heard.

There is little to notice here save the excellent baths, erected by orders of the Sirdar (Sir Reginald Wingate) which are enjoyed exceedingly by those who have journeyed across the fiery plains. After a night in the arid desert air, the luxury of a warm and also a cold bath, served in perfect style, is a thing not to be forgotten.

Lord Cromer's proposed railway along the right bank of the Nile to Dongola

will start from Abu Hamed. When this is made it will afford access to the Pyramids and Temples of Jebel Barkal, and the temples at Solib and beyond. These also in time will no doubt be made accessible by roads from Dongola. These Temples and Pyramids are fully described in Chapters IV., V. and VI.



STATION NO. 2 IN 1899.

Captain Sholto Douglas, R.E.

There are several

stations between Abu Hamed and Berber at which express trains do not stop. Deep khors (dry ravines), are occasionally bridged by the railway—I give a view of one of these at Wadi Amur, 50 miles south of Abu Hamed—whence we get a peep of the Nile and its scenery as the express train flies along without stopping till Berber is reached.

Berber (361 miles from Abu Hamed) is now a long straggling village of mud huts. The district contains about 5,000 inhabitants.

Berber was taken by the Mahdists on May 26th, 1884, and was recaptured by the Anglo-Egyptian forces under Lord Kitchener on September 6th, 1897. It is now the capital of the Berber province and the headquarters of an Egyptian battalion. The old town, a mass of ruins, lies to the south. It is possible that Berber will become an important place when the railway from thence to Suakin is completed.



RAILWAY BRIDGE OVER THE WADI AMUR.
Midwinter Bey.



BRIDGE OVER THE ATBARA IN COURSE OF BUILDING.
Midwinter Bey.



TEMPORARY BRIDGE OVER THE ATBARA, 1898.
Capt. Sholto Douglas, R.E.



THE ATBARA BRIDGE.
C. E. Dupuis.



STATION NO. 4.

Midwinter Bey.

El Damer (392 miles from Abu Hamed) is the next station.¹ At present there is a population of about 700, mostly of the loyal Jaalin. Being a more healthy place than Berber the garrison will be moved to El Damer. El Damer was once famous for its university and learning. It had fallen upon evil days and suffered

much during the Dervish reign of terror. Its population and prosperity are rapidly increasing, and there is quite a good market. Caravans come from Gedaref. There is a railway station at Kabushia, 26 miles from Shendi, where there is good grazing and fertile soil. An agricultural company has erected pumps for irrigation purposes, and the locality is rapidly improving.

After crossing the Atbara, a short distance north of Shendi, the pyramids of Meroë, of which there are nearly a hundred, are seen about two miles to the east of the railway. They are best



PLATELAYERS, 1898-9.

Captain Sholto Douglas, R.E.

¹ Here the iron bridge crosses the River Atbara. This was constructed in America, as the great strike of engineers paralysed all such contracts in England at the time. It delayed progress of the war and the completion of the railway, considerably. The railway line from the Atbara to Khartoum was not laid until the year after the war was over.

SHENDI, PYRAMIDS OF MEROË, KHARTOUM.

visited from Shendi. A special section must be devoted to these and other antiquities in this neighbourhood, the remains of the ancient kingdom of Meroë, whose origin and date are still very mysterious. (Chapter X.)

Shendi (471 miles from Abu Hamed) was once an important place with 7,000 inhabitants, but Mehemet Ali, enraged at the murder of his son Ismail, in 1822, had the inhabitants massacred. The place is healthy and the land excellent.

Extensive railway workshops, the best railway station in the Sudan, built of a handsome local stone, are the boast of Shendi. It was taken by the Egyptian army on March 26th, 1898. Shendi is on the site of the ancient capital of the kingdom of Meroë. In Bruce's time it was remarkable for the finest men and most beautiful women in the Sudan.

The railway from Shendi to Khartoum (104 miles) leaves the river for a long way so that travellers by the express trains miss the Nile altogether and



MEROË (BAKRAWIYA)—PYRAMIDS AS SEEN FROM THE RAILWAY.

Caillaud.

the picturesque Sixth Cataract—the Shabluka. We fly past a number of small wayside stations, but as there are no hotels or rest-houses and the trains that stop at every station are inconvenient for travellers, we will not linger to describe them.

According to Lepsius, the journey by the Nile's course was, in 1840, quite safe and open. He describes it as both interesting and picturesque, and some day it may be again made available.

The Shabluka Cataract will be described in Chapters VII. and VIII., when we make the voyage by the Nile. This region is likely to become very important as the cataract may be utilised for supplying water for the fertile land on both

sides of the river where cotton growing on a large scale can be developed. But the direct military railway carries us on through an uninteresting country, and by this time we are heartily glad to leave the train at Halfaya, opposite Khartoum, on the Blue Nile. A steam ferry conveys the passengers from the railway to the opposite shore. We pass the stately Palace of the Governor-General, embosomed in trees, and in a few minutes arrive at the hotel landing stage.

We shall now devote several chapters to the route by the river's banks, making an imaginary journey all the way from Abu Halfa to Khartoum, by the winding Nile, the ancient highway, stopping to notice anything of interest by the way, and making detours to describe adjacent places of interest.



WADI HALFA—SIRDAR'S LANDING STAGE.

Midwinter Bey.

CHAPTER IV.

WADI HALFA TO AMARA BY THE COURSE OF THE NILE.



THE SECOND CATARACT, LOOKING SOUTH.

WADI HALFA, BEN HUR, ABUSIR, SARRAS, SEMNA, KUMMA, AMARA,
USERTESEN I., AMENEMHAT III., THOTHMES III.
THE GOLD SIGNET RING OF USERTESEN I.



THE NILE AT HALFA.

Midwinter Bay.

CHAPTER IV.

WADI HALFA TO ABU HAMED BY THE COURSE OF THE NILE.

THE river Nile was of course the ancient highway, along which all the old, and most of the modern, cities are found. In the previous chapter we have already described the modern route direct across the desert from Wadi Halfa to Abu Hamed.

It is expected that the Government will shortly be in a position to facilitate excursions to the ancient sites along the Nile, and to form for the Sudan a Department of Antiquities, one of the duties of which will be to give information, with tariff of expenses for camping outfits, from Wadi Halfa, Abu Hamed, Shendi, etc., etc. When the proposed railway is made from Abu Hamed to Dongola, facilities will be made for reaching Jebel Barkal and the Pyramid fields there, and those of Tangassi, Nuri, Kurru, and Zuma. Till then they can only be visited by camping out with tents and camels and some amount of escort.

In the first place, however, it may be stated, for

those who are not pressed for time, that there is now a respectable hotel at Wadi Halfa, and that the place is worth a couple of days' stay.

Wadi Halfa is now a large town. It comprises, in fact, two towns, about a mile apart; the northern being known as Taufikia, and the southern portion as "The Camp." When I first visited it in 1894, it was a wretched assemblage of mud huts where a strong garrison of Egyptian soldiers was quartered, and only two British officers, Majors Lloyd and Palmer. They treated my party with great kindness and provided us with an escort of the Mounted Camel Corps, with whom we visited the Second Cataract. This was necessary, for though there was a fort and garrison at Sarras, 33 miles beyond the Cataract, the Dervishes had raided a village not far off a few days before.



ON THE NILE NEARING WADI HALFA.

Dupuis.



THE RIVER FRONT, HALFA.

Dupuis.

Wadi Halfa is now a prosperous place with 3,000 inhabitants, and is the seat of the Sudanese Railway Administration, with fine engineering workshops, which are well worthy of a visit.¹

On the west bank, opposite Halfa, there are remains of the ancient town of BUHEN with ruins of two temples of

the XIIth Dynasty, and a fortress of the same date. The northern temple contained a remarkable stele (carried off by the expedition of Champollion and Rosellini, about 70 years ago), now in Florence. Captain Lyons recently excavated the temple and found the lower half of the stele which Rosellini had not noticed. It is now in Florence also, and Dr. Breasted has translated the whole inscription. (*S.B.A.*, Vol. XXV.)

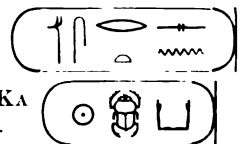
It proves to be a document commemorating the conquest of the Sudan by USERTESEN I. (c. 2750 B.C.) with a list of ten cities taken by him, these being represented by oval battlemented panels, each held by a captive and with the name of the town in the centre. These places were all between Buhen and Dongola, and the text describes a rich and populous region, with quantities of grain and other crops. This contrasts curiously with the state of the land at the present day. Dr. Breasted's article is most interesting. He shows that the king's name should be read SENWOSRET, from which the Greeks coined SESOSTRIS, attributing his deeds to many later Pharaohs and *vice versa*.

South of this, at Ben Hur, five miles from Halfa, there is another temple, erected, it is believed,



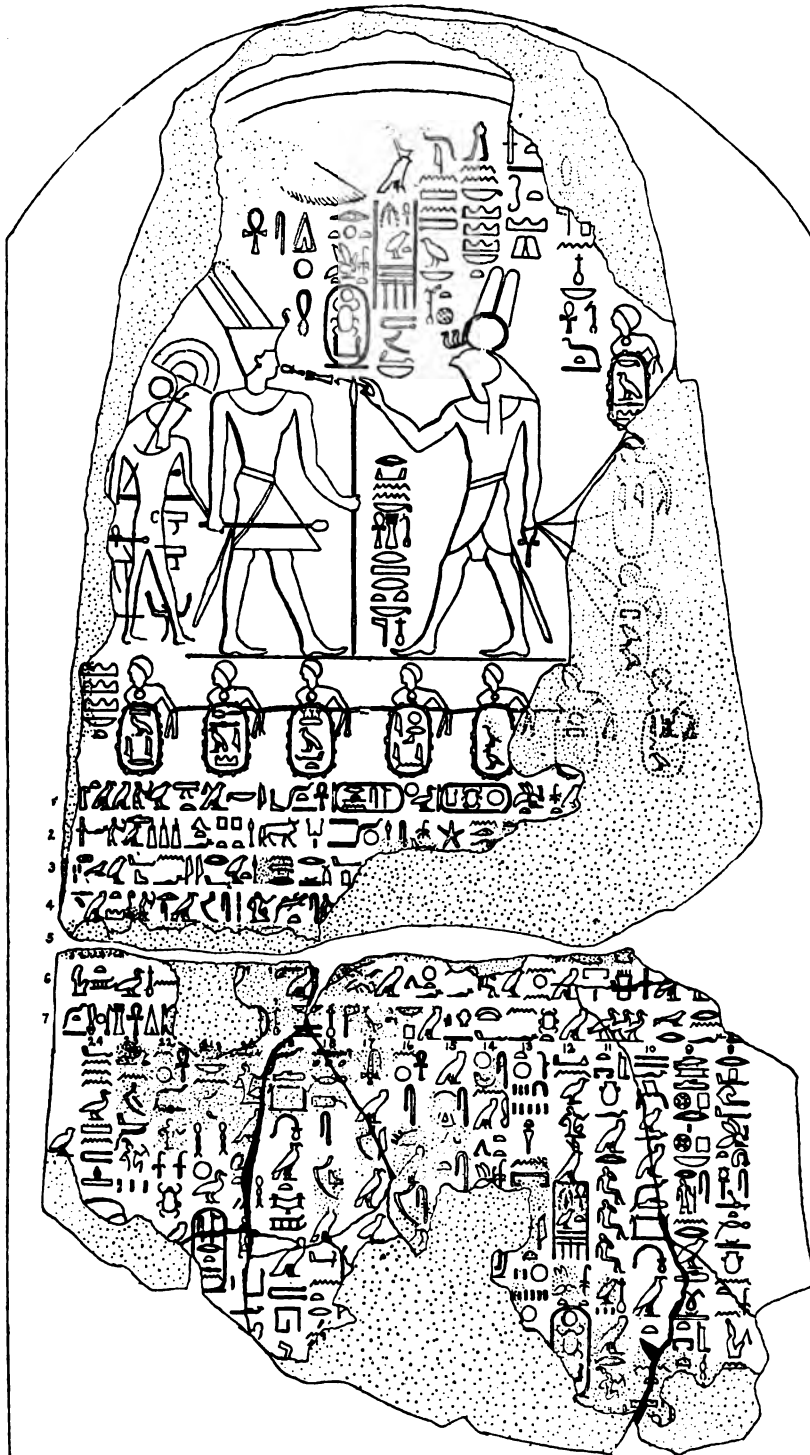
USERTESEN I.

RA KHEPER KA
Throne Name.



¹ Halfa was the headquarters of the frontier force from 1885 to 1898, but now no garrison is necessary.

THE CAMPAIGN OF USERTESEN I., THE CONQUEROR OF THE SUDAN, c. 2750 B.C.

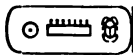


STELE FOUND IN THE TEMPLE OF THE ANCIENT TOWN OF BUHEN, OPPOSITE WADI HALFA.
NOW IN THE MUSEUM, FLORENCE.

From the "Proceedings, Society of Biblical Archaeology," Vol. XXV., copied by permission of W. Nash, Esq., Hon. Sec.



THOTHMES III.
(British Museum.)



MEN KHEPER RA.

by THOTHMES III. (c. 1550 B.C.) the blocks of which bore inscriptions, many of which, I fear, have disappeared. This temple is best seen on the land journey to Abusir, not far from the ferry.

The Second Cataract is a magnificent sight. It can be reached by boat or by land. The land journey is the most interesting. On reaching the summit of Abusir a most impressive view of the scene of desolation extending southwards for many miles is unexpectedly displayed before us. On a clear day the mountains of Dongola can be seen. The waste of rocky rapids extends for several miles. At High Nile it must be a glorious sight, and one cannot help regretting that Sir William Willcocks had not placed his Great Dam here, instead of at Philae. But he must not be blamed, for when he came here to survey the site, he needed an escort of 150 men, armed to the teeth, to convoy him to SEMNA, where he wished to see the records of the Nile's height of 4,500 years ago.

At that time, there was no hope of the Sudan being conquered, so Willcocks had to make his Reservoir lower down the river. One day there will be a Dam made here also, where nature has done half the work already. If 50 feet of water were held up at this point, it would feed the crops all the way back to Abu Hamed, or beyond, and give the Sudan perennial irrigation as well as Egypt. The vertical cliff at Abusir bears hundreds of travellers' names, among which are the signatures of Champolion, Rosellini, Lepsius, and many other great men.

The railway along the Nile, from Halfa to Kerma, is of a rough description. It was originally laid in a hurry for the Dongola Expedition in 1896, the previous line having been destroyed by the Dervishes. It has

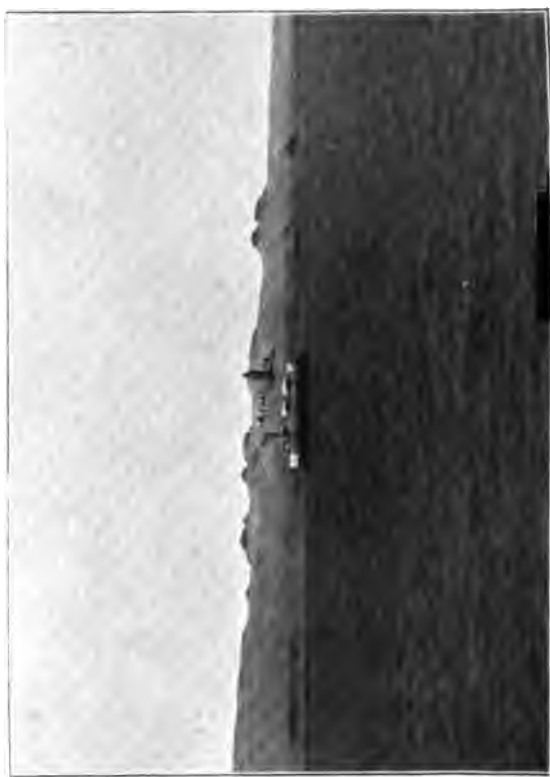


GARDNER GUN : FORT AT SARRAS.

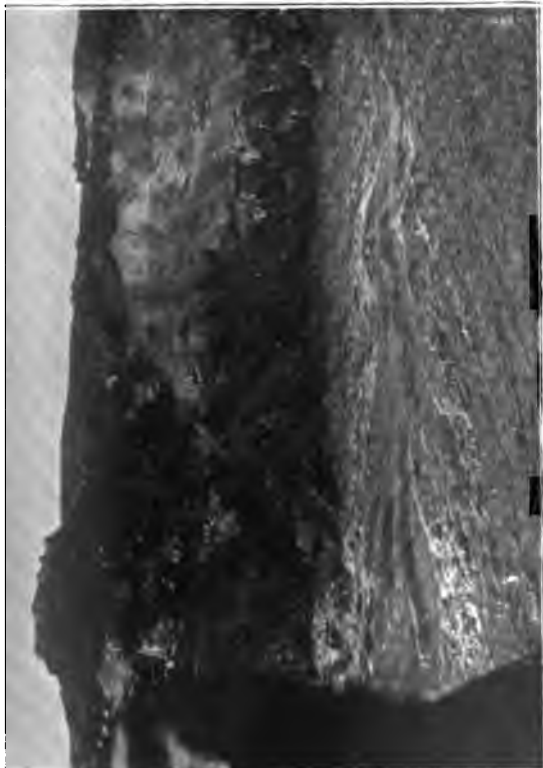
Lady Amherst of Hackney.



TEMPLE OF BEN HUR.



TEMPLE OF BEN HUR AND STEAMER "IBIS," NEAR WADI HALFA.



BAB EL KEBIR, SECOND CATARACT.



SARRAS GARRISONED BY 10TH SUDANESE. *Lady Amherst of Hackney.*

bad curves and gradients and is liable to wash-outs and may have to be abandoned, Lord Cromer tells us. He promises instead a line from Abu Hamed to Dongola, but that will not serve this district. It certainly would seem the duty of the authorities to provide communication with this once thriving and populous part of the Nile. Here are the stations and distances. Although the railway may be removed the distances may be useful.



10TH SUDANESE DRILLING AT SARRAS.—LOOKING SOUTH. *Lady Amherst of Hackney.*

Wadi Halfa to Sarras	...	33 miles.	On the river.
Ambigol	...	64 "	In the desert; wells.
Akasha	...	86 "	On the river.
Kosha	...	105 "	On the river—rail strikes desert.
Kuror	...	137 "	In desert.
Dalگو	...	164 "	Railway rejoins river.
Kerma	...	203 "	On the river.

Kerma to Dongola 30 miles. Transport by donkey or camel, or by river when the Nile is high.

We will now proceed along the Nile towards Dongola from the Second Cataract, describing what may be of interest by the way. Three miles south of Abusir (Count Gleichen tells us in his excellent *Anglo-Egyptian Sudan*) there are the remains of an ancient fortress and small temple at Matuka, built by Usertesen I. of the XIIth Dynasty.

On a large island opposite are the remains of a similar fort, and on another small island to the south are the ruins of a Christian Church called Darbe, from which a magnificent view is obtained.

At Sarras, 33 miles from Halfa, there is a modern fort and barracks. This was the frontier fortress before the last campaign. The view of the Nile, looking south, is very beautiful. I am indebted to Lady Amherst of Hackney for the accompanying illustrations taken in 1896.

THE TEMPLES OF SEMNA AND KUMMA.

Forty-three miles south of Halfa, where the Nile narrows, are the fortress temples of SEMNA and KUMMA built by USERTESEN III. (XIIth Dynasty): rebuilt and extended by THOTHMES III. (XVIIIth Dynasty). They are in fair preservation still, with a



TEMPLE ON THE RIGHT BANK.

Caillaud.

temple and fort on either side of the river. Semna on the west bank is 300 feet above the river, Kumma, opposite, being 400 feet above it. Sir William Willcocks, who visited this place to inspect the ancient records of "High Nile," graven on the rocks, was



SEMNA TEMPLE ON THE LEFT BANK.

Caillaud.

struck with the suitability of the locality for a reservoir. He conjectured that the XIIth Dynasty Kings must have made one here, which has now disappeared. The heights of the flood as recorded are 25 or 26 feet higher above those of present years,

and Sir William Willcocks points out that if there were originally a reservoir here, this discrepancy would be accounted for. He considers that this Nilometer was made in connection with the ancient great irrigation works at Lake Moeris. In 4,000 years all traces of any ancient Dam would have disappeared, but a careful search may still discover some remains of the embankments. The records on the rocks are a number



TEMPLE AT SEMNA.

Hoskins.

of short inscriptions giving the Nile's height at flood for many years, and are most interesting proof of the engineering talents of the great kings of the XIIth Dynasty, whose example after 4,500 years we are at length striving to emulate.

We have seen that at Buhen near Halfa, Usertesen I. of the XIIth Dynasty was styled the Conqueror of the Sudan. In the great respect paid to his memory in the carving on the walls of the temple at Semna, the same idea is evident. Usertesen is.



TEMPLE OF SEMNA—THOTHMES III. DOING HOMAGE TO USERTESEN I. AS THE FIRST CONQUEROR OF THE SUDAN.

Hoskins.

GOLD SIGNET RING OF USERTESEN I.

represented in heaven in his sacred boat. Thothmes of the XVIIIth Dynasty, from his earthly kingdom, reveres him. There is no doubt but the object of these XIIth Dynasty Kings was to seize the gold-mines of the Sudan. Captain Amery tells me that a rich gold mine has been opened almost due west of Semna, between the military railway and the Red Sea. They are undoubtedly the ancient workings, and are far from being exhausted.

Some years ago when journeying by the Nile in Egypt along with my friend, Professor Sayce, I acquired the gold signet ring of USERTESEN I., of which an engraving is appended. It is believed to be of Sudanese metal, and is a wonderful relic of one of the greatest and wisest rulers who ever sat upon the throne of Egypt. It is the oldest royal ring known and weighs 678 grains of pure gold.



WEIGHT OF THE ROYAL
JEWELLER OF USERTESEN I.
Imperial Museum, Vienna.



THE GOLD SIGNET RING OF
USERTESEN I.
From the Author's Collection.



WEIGHT OF THE ROYAL
JEWELLER OF USERTESEN I.
Imperial Museum, Vienna.

I recently found the name of the goldsmith who possibly made the ring, on a weight in the Museum of Vienna. I append illustrations of this curious object. It will be seen that the cartouche of Usertesen is on one side, and the inscription "the royal jeweller HOR·MERA," on the other. My attention was drawn to this weight by Dr. Flinders Petrie. It is of alabaster, weighing 853 grains, *i.e.* troy of the gold-standard of 213 grains. No doubt it was from the jeweller's tomb. There was a set of eight weights, but they have disappeared. Possibly this notice may induce owners and keepers of collections to be on the look out for them.

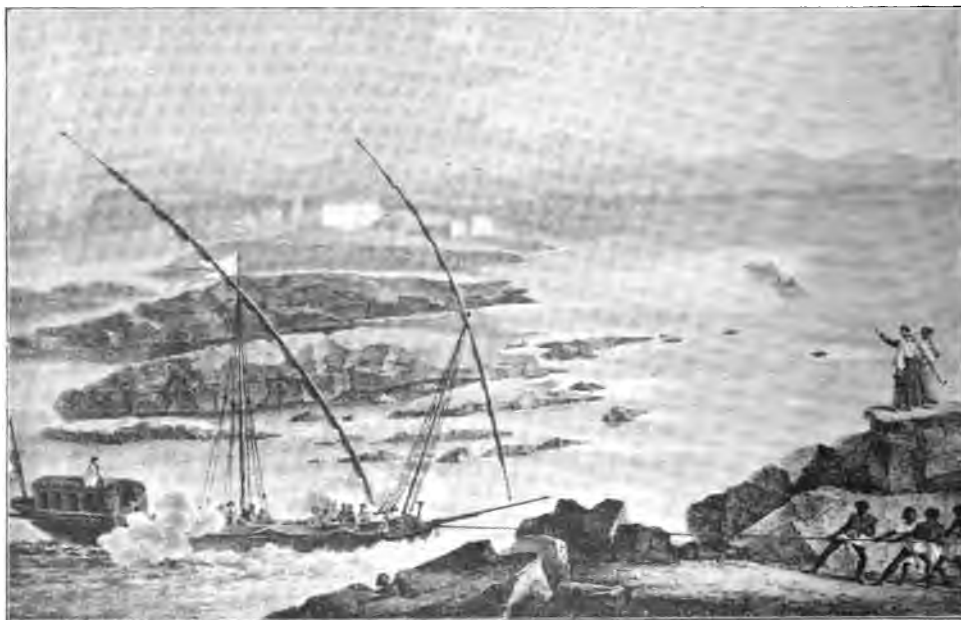
THE TWIN FORTRESSES OF SEMNA AND KUMMA.

CAILLAUD, HOSKINS, and LEPSIUS all unite in praising the selection of the site of these twin fortresses. Doubtless, there was once a large and populous town also here, as the traces of the fortifications are of vast extent. The village of Semna, on the west bank of the Nile, is now a miserable place.

PLAN OF THE TEMPLES AND FORTS ON BOTH SIDES.



The position is admirable for defence or for control of the Nile. The rocky islets seem made by nature for a Dam, and it is not to be wondered at that the makers of Lake Moeris, the Great Kings of the XIIth Dynasty, turned their attention to its exploitation.



When Caillaud's Expedition was made into these regions Mehemet Ali was carrying on war in the south to avenge his son's murder, and Caillaud in some way was permitted to accompany the troops. The quaint engravings give an admirable idea of the place and of the state of affairs in 1820, and no later representation has ever been made.

THE ANCIENT RECORDS OF HIGH NILE ENGRAVED ON THE ROCKS AT SEMNA AND KUMMA (*Lepsius*).



PORTRAIT OF AMENEMHAT III.

It is interesting to possess the portrait of one of the pioneers of Egyptian irrigation—whose records are still found on the living rock where his officers carved them 4,400 years ago. This splendid portrait is in the Hermitage Museum of St. Petersburg, and is a likeness of a great and wise King and at the same time one who was an enlightened and beneficent ruler. He had two titles, the second being found in these inscriptions.



A-MEN-M-HAT.



MAAT-EN-RA.
His Second Name.

INSCRIPTION ON THE ROCKS AT SEMNA.

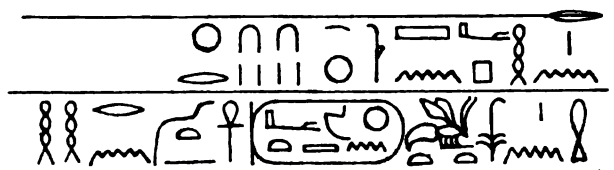


Translation.

In the year nine, the level of the Nile of the 8th year (and) during the 9th year under the Majesty of the King of Upper and Lower Egypt. EN MAAT RA Living for Ever. With the troop of soldiers belonging to the attendant of the prince's (table). *Sebek-khu* deceased, his good name was *Aa Shepses* deceased possessor of the order of merit born of *Atau*. (His mother's name.)

Dr. Herbert Walker, who kindly translates this for us, says this was evidently a military expedition as well as one to record the readings of the Nilometer. The other records are quite short in comparison with this one.

SHORT INSCRIPTION FROM THE ROCKS ON THE KUMMA SIDE.



Translation.—Lord of the Nile of the 41st year under the Majesty of the King of the North and South MAAT EN RA, living for ever and ever.

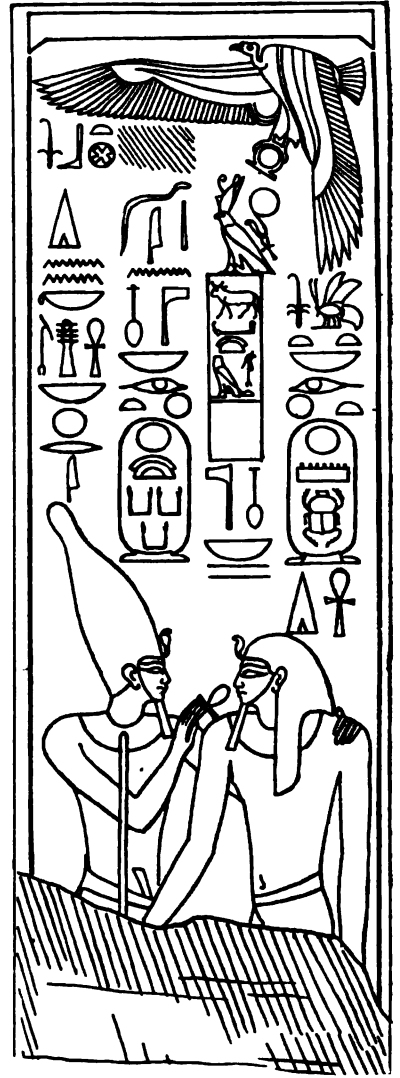
The oval sign with a line through it at the upper right corner is the mark for the actual height of the flood.

A few more words about these interesting twin-temples. Their architecture is in simple but massive style, yet elegant. There have been extensive buildings near, apparently strongly fortified, and with extensive barracks. The temple on the east bank has its polygonal columns standing. The temple on the west bank is more massive, but more ruinous. In the inscriptions the credit of the earliest conquest of this region is always given to USERTESEN I., and THOTHMES III. pays homage to him and to USERTESEN III. in the temples, restored or built 1,000 years later, in the XVIIIth Dynasty.

In the remarkable relief which we here engrave, which still remains in the Temple of Semna, Usertesen III., of the XIIth Dynasty, is represented giving divine benefits to Thothmes III.

The magnificent stele, which is now in Berlin, was found at Semna by Lepsius. This elaborately records the conquests of Usertesen III. in these regions. No doubt other historical inscriptions still remain here, awaiting discovery. Lepsius did not excavate, he merely copied the inscriptions above ground and carried off anything portable, to enrich the Museum of his patron, the king of Prussia.

Lepsius describes remarkable hot sulphur springs at Okme, on the west bank. These may become valuable health-giving waters when the country is developed, as they seem to possess wonderful restorative qualities. The natives have great faith in their efficacy, and Lepsius describes how they were made use of. There was a tower erected over the fountain, with walls nine feet thick, evidently once an important thermal bath. The natives, however, made use of the sulphurous waters by being immersed in holes dug in the ground and covered with rushes to keep off the steam. There were sixteen hot springs within a small space.



CARVING OF THOTHMES III. AT SEMNA—
THE GREAT USERTESEN GIVES LIFE
TO HIS DESCENDANT OF 800 YEARS
LATER.

THE TEMPLE OF AMARA.

THE TEMPLE OF AMARA.

At AMARA, near the village of that name, are important ruins of a temple of Ethiopian origin with sculptured columns. Here, to quote from Lepsius, we first meet with the curious Ethiopic hieroglyphic texts, as yet untranslated. They are based on Egyptian signs, but express a lost language which cannot be read till some bilingual texts are found. Remains of an earlier temple on the site here may perhaps exist under this present structure. Such a commanding position would have been utilised by the XIIth and XVIIIth Dynasty builders, and researches by scientific excavators may find records of earlier settlements on the same spot. The date of the existing temple of Amara is probably as late, or later, than 500 B.C., for we here see the stout Queens in evidence, who are not found of an earlier date and whom we shall see frequently at Naga and other cities of the Sudan, in the region known to the classic writers as the kingdom of Meroë. Very possibly excavations here would show that the existing temple was merely a reconstruction of a much older edifice. The present building is very simple in plan. A wide doorway (19 feet) flanked by two columns each 3 feet 8 inches in diameter, of which fragments remain. Inside, eight columns, richly sculptured, 3 feet 8 inches in diameter, symmetrically placed in an apartment 53 by 30 feet. Hoskins and Lepsius praise the sculpture and the commanding situation of the temple.



TEMPLE AT AMARA.

Hoskins.

The twin temples of Semna and Kumma are such a short way from Wadi Halfa and the Second Cataract, that it would not strain the powers of the authorities to any great degree to facilitate their being visited with comparative ease and safety. At the present time, it is almost impossible for a tourist to reach them, while in the last century the visit to Semna was quite an easy excursion. It is not too much to say that the records of the Nile levels on the cliffs at the margins of the gorge at Semna, are the most interesting thing of the kind in the world, being quite unique, and their survival to our time, is little short of marvellous.



AMARA—VIEW OF THE TEMPLE FROM THE WEST.

Caillavet.

In Hoskins' account of this place he describes the natives as clean and industrious and the region fertile. Hoskins was told of the remains of many ancient cities and temples in the neighbourhood which he had not time to visit.

At SAI ISLAND, 130 miles from Halfa, there are remains of a town and a Christian Church and extensive cemeteries. There is also a temple with inscriptions of THOTHMES III. and AMENHOTEP I. (XVIIIth Dynasty). The columns of the church are granite monoliths; each has Greek crosses on the capital. At Jebel Dush is a fine tomb with carvings of the time of THOTHMES III.

The whole neighbourhood seems to abound in ruins of a past civilisation, and a careful archaeological survey should be made of it.

This temple at Thebes will give an idea of the style of the columns of the temple at Amara when in a more perfect state.



TEMPLE AT MEDINET HABU, THEBES, RESTORED BY TAHARQA.

(See Chapter VI., Page 63.)

The Scarab shown on page 63, was found here.

CHAPTER V.

SOLIB AND ITS TEMPLES. SEDINGA. SESEBI.
THE COLOSSI OF THE XIIITH DYNASTY.



COLOSSAL LION FROM JEBEL BARKAL (FORMERLY AT SOLIB) IN THE BRITISH MUSEUM.
The cartouches of Amenhotep were altered to those of Taharqa.

SEDINGA, SOLIB, THE HISTORICAL SCARABS OF AMENHOTEP III.,
TOMBOS ISLAND, ARGO ISLAND, THE THREE COLOSSI,
TEMPLE OF SETI AT SESEBI, HANNEK, THE THIRD CATARACT, NEW AND OLD DONGOLA.

FOR COMPARISON OF THE ARCHITECTURAL FEATURES OF AMENHOTEP'S BUILDINGS IN
EGYPT AND THE SUDAN.



TEMPLE OF AMENHOTEP III., AT LUXOR, EGYPT.

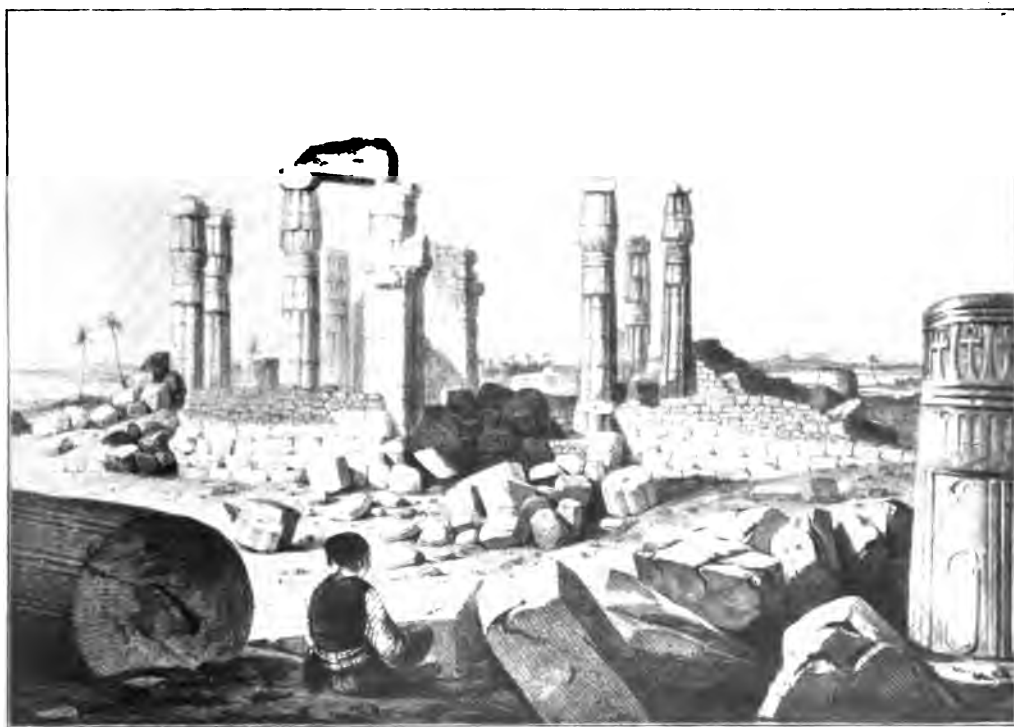
The columns are absolutely identical in design with those of the same king's temple at So'ib.

"THE HANDSOMEST TEMPLE IN THE SUDAN."



TEMPLE OF AMENHOTEP III., SOLIH.

Hoskins.



TEMPLE OF AMENHOTEP III., SOLIH.

Hoskins.

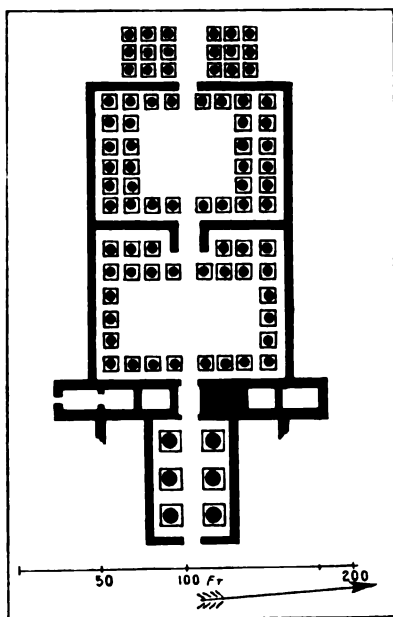


SEDINGA: TEMPLE OF QUEEN TYI.

Lepsius.

THE TEMPLE OF QUEEN TYI AT SEDINGA.

AT SEDINGA, six miles from Sai island, there are remains of a fine temple built by AMENHOTEP III. on the east bank. This temple was dedicated to his QUEEN TYI, and their cartouches are found side by side, as at Thebes. Caillaud and Hoskins portray the ruins, which are in fine style, but neither of these travellers took time to excavate or to endeavour to find the plan of the temple which has evidently been violently destroyed. It was undoubtedly a beautiful structure and deserves careful exploration.



PLAN OF TEMPLE AT SOLIB.
The outer Pylons have disappeared.

Seven miles beyond we come to the ruins of perhaps the finest temple built in the XVIIIth Dynasty. These are the ruins of SOLIB, also built by Amenhotep, and certainly are the "handsomest in the Sudan." (This is the epithet used by Hoskins.)

Here AMENHOTEP III. glorifies himself as a deity as he did his beloved TYI at Sedinga. The architect must have been the same genius who worked for this monarch at Thebes. The columns are identical in design, but in better preservation, and are very elegant. It evidently had avenues of colossal carved lions and rams in the same style as

those of Karnak. Many of these colossal animals were carried off by Taharqa to decorate his own temple at Jebel Barkal about 800 years later.

The temple of Solib stands in a splendid situation. "It is very imposing as it rises up proudly at the extremity of the desert, the only beacon of civilisation in a sea of barrenness; it is picturesque as it is extraordinary, and a little way off, has the beauty of an exquisite Grecian temple. But on nearer approach, we see that it is of the finest, true Egyptian architecture, and the plan is chastely simple.

"The first pylon was 600 feet from the Nile but is entirely ruined, and the material nearly all carried away. A flight of steps led up to a court, before the second pylon; this court is 70 feet long and 45 feet wide. Six massive columns of 10 feet diameter stood in the court, but they have been carried off, only their bases remain." This was in the time of Hoskins; I fear more destruction may have gone on since his time. He remarks that the second pylons are not solid, as usual in Egyptian temples, but consist

of small apartments, and as they have no doors he thinks this was done to economise stone. These pylons are panelled, he thinks, for the same purpose, but it adds to the effect.

"Each wing is 78 feet wide, the doorway being 11, makes the total 167 feet; the depth of the pylons 24 feet. The view into the great court behind is magnificent. It is 90 feet by 113, and had 28 columns, of which 7 are standing. They are all of the bud-shaped-capital



PORTRAIT OF QUEEN TITI.
From the Cairo Museum.



COLOSSAL PORTRAIT OF
AMENHOTEP III.
British Museum.

type, 19 feet 4 inches in circumference, and of exquisite elegance of proportions. On several of the columns are the cartouche and titles of AMENHOTEP III. and those of Amen Ra. Only one retains part of its architrave, and it is one of the most perfect and beautiful."

The next court is more destroyed, but the plan can still be traced. It is also 78 feet long, and had 32 columns, the circumference of each 17 feet, but not one of them is standing. The next chamber contains the remains of 12 columns, only one, a beautiful one with a graceful palm capital, remains upright. The drums of these columns were ornamented with sculptured figures of prisoners in relief. Turreted ovals contained the names of the countries conquered. The figures were intended for portraits of the different races subdued; some with fine features, and others of Negro type; the hair of the one represented long, hanging down the shoulders, the other with thick lips, wide nostrils, high cheek bones and woolly hair. The temple extended beyond this room, 540

feet in all. Fragments of columns which were three feet in diameter lie about, where other buildings existed. It is possible that the foundation, if excavated, would give the plan of these buildings also. Much sculptured work adorned the temple, of which traces remain everywhere. All the inscriptions are in true Egyptian hieroglyphs.

The scenery of the neighbourhood is, according to Hoskins, still grand, even magnificent. On one side the trackless yellow desert, bounded only by the horizon; on the other a luxurious and beautiful vegetation flourishes, with the silvery Nile beyond. The remains of the ancient city extend for a considerable distance to south and north. On the bank of the river, 240 yards further north than the temple, are the remains of



THE TEMPLE OF AMENHOTEP III. AT SOLIB.

Hoskins.

a small pier, while 200 yards to the north of this pier there is a projection of stones thrown into the river, apparently to form a port.

In the British Museum are the pair of magnificent lions in black granite, which Lord Prudhoe brought from Napata, early in the past century: these, Lepsius informs us, were originally rifled from Solib by Taharqa.¹ The splendid colossal Ram which Lepsius carried off from Napata, was originally erected by AMENHOTEP III. at Solib. There are buried under the sands doubtless many more of these colossal

¹ It is strange that these are the only known colossal lions of early Egyptian work. They possibly formed an allusion to the lion-hunting feats of the king's youth, before he married the great Syrian Princess Tyi. These lion-hunts most likely took place in the wild region where he afterwards built these Temples of Sedinga and Solib. There were no possibilities of hunting lions in a densely populated land such as Egypt was then. But in the Sudan there were many lions and still these animals abound in many districts.



THERES : THE COLOSSI OF AMENHOTEP III. DURING THE INUNDATION.
THESE STOOD BEFORE A TEMPLE WHICH HAS ALL VANISHED.



ANCIENT FORT AT DEFUFA.



AMENHOTEP'S AVENUE OF RAM-SPHINXES AT KARNAK, EGYPT.
Identical in design and size with those erected by him at Solih.

rams, as this king was very partial to avenues of the same figures. Not one of all the hundreds in the avenue at Karnak is perfect, while the one from Solib, now in Berlin, is as fresh as the day it was carved.

Fortunately, fair portraits exist of Amenhotep and his Queen, of which engravings are given. This notable royal pair seem to have been remarkable for their good looks. They were certainly the model couple of ancient Egyptian History. Their "marriage" scarabs are unique, and Amenhotep seems to have been as proud of his union with the great Syrian princess, as he was when he was engaged in hunting lions to her honour.

I have given much space to illustrate and describe this magnificent temple, which has hitherto been passed over by archaeologists. It is peculiarly interesting to us because it serves to show what the same king's temple at Thebes must have been



SCARAB OF TYI AND AMENHOTEP.

Tyi's name in a cartouche giving her equal rank with her husband.

like. The Theban temple has utterly perished, only the twin colossi which stood at its gates remain. At Solib we find, 1,000 miles along the winding Nile, a temple which may be a duplicate of the lost great Theban temple of AMENHOTEP III.

This temple of Solib was probably the finest he ever built. It is recorded that Amenhotep and Tyi both went to Nubia specially to attend its inaugural ceremonies.

His temple at Thebes and this one were probably similar in design, with a couple of colossi before the gates of each. At Thebes the temple has disappeared, but the colossi remain; here the temple remains, but there is no sign of the colossi. There being two colossi on the Island of Argo, comparatively near at hand, of an earlier Egyptian King than Amenhotep, would make us suspect that there were colossi before the temple of Solib. Excavations might prove if there ever were any, their foundations may still exist. (A friend suggests that Amenhotep had commenced to remove Sebekhotep's colossi to adorn his own temple, but I hesitate to admit this view.)

It is the duty of the Egyptian Government to facilitate approach to this wonderful outpost of a lost civilisation, which has probably never been seen by any living Egyptologist.










AMENHOTEP III. was one of the greatest monarchs who ever ruled Egypt—his date was 1414–1379 B.C. At Luxor, Karnak, and Thebes no complete design of his has come down to our times: we possess only fragments of his graceful architecture, beside which that of later builders is coarse and vulgar in contrast. Here one entire work of his yet remains, sufficient being left to find its original plan. No doubt more of Amenhotep's and Tyi's large historical scarabs, so scarce, might be discovered here with proper search, for they were possibly made to commemorate events that happened in this region.

AMENHOTEP'S OFFICIAL SCARABS.














These great scarabs are curious, being only issued by Amenhotep. They are very scarce and seem to have been distributed to each province as a sort of official announcement of his marriage with a great lady whom he considered to be as exalted as himself. Two of these scarabs, from the author's collection, are engraved (full size) in order to induce a search for others similar to them in this locality.
















TRANSLATION OF THE "MARRIAGE SCARAB" OF AMENHOTEP III. AND QUEEN TYI.

Line 1.        2.  















Lives the Horus, the strong bull, resplendent in Truth, the double ruler, establishing

       3.      











lates, pacifying the two lands. The golden Horus, great of valour, smiting the Asiatics,

  4.          5.  

















{ King of Upper and } Amenhotep III., son of the Sun, { Amenhotep } giving life. The royal wife,
{ Lower Egypt. }

         6.     

the great one, Tyi living. The name of her father Yuya, the name of

   7.       

her mother Thuya. She is the wife of the mighty king.

8.         9.      10.   































































His boundary the Southern one to Kary, the Northern one to Mesopotamia.

THE "LION HUNT" SCARABS OF AMENHOTEP III. AND QUEEN TYI.

There are other official scarabs of this sovereign, made on a similar scale to the marriage one. The most interesting of these is one recording the king's hunting of lions, which may have occurred in these regions. One of the Lion Hunt scarabs from the author's collection is here reproduced—full size.



TRANSLATION OF THE "LION HUNT" SCARAB OF AMENHOTEP III.

Line 1.        2.  
Lives the Horus, the strong bull, resplendent in Truth, double ruler, establishing
      3.      
laws, pacifying the two lands. The golden Horus, great of valour, smiting the Asiatics,
  4.         5. 
{ King of Upper and Lower Egypt. } Amenhotep III., son of the Sun, { Amenhotep ruler of Thebes, } giving life. The royal wife,
      6.         
the great one Tyi. The number of lions taken by his Majesty in his hunting himself,
   7.        8.     
beginning from year 1 unto year 10. Lions fierce 102.

TEMPLE OF SETI I. AT SESEBI.



SESEBI : TEMPLE OF SETI I.

Caillaud.

Having devoted many pages to the wonders of Solib, we must now resume our journey. Still travelling south, a number of the remains of ancient forts occur. One of these near SESE, on the left bank of the Nile, is a fine example. The view from it is magnificent, and the many forts both far and near tell of a former numerous and warlike population, which has now almost disappeared.

A few miles south of this is SESEBI opposite the modern town of Dalgo. Here are the scanty ruins of a once beautiful temple bearing the cartouches of SETI I., XIXth Dynasty, the most southern point where his name has been found, which proves that the story of his Sudan expeditions on his Egyptian monuments is true. Some doubts have been thrown on his having been in Ethiopia, but he called himself king of these regions. His son, RAMESES II., seems to have completed his southern labours by the erection of the great temple of Abu Simbel, although Lepsius says he built at Jebel Barkal, which is doubtful.

The style of this temple differs from the other temples of the same king. Caillaud's illustration, given above, shows the state of the ruins in 1820; since then I am told that one of the columns has fallen. Everything built by Seti was beautiful and nothing as good as his architecture was done after his death. His date was 1327-1275 B.C. His mummy is in the Cairo Museum, his coffin is in London (at Sir John Soane's Museum) and his tomb is at Thebes. His mummy is the only one that is really pleasant to look at---the intellectual head seems in a peaceful sleep. Seti



SETI OFFERING TO THE GODDESS OF TRUTH.

(Temple of Abydos.)

needed much capital for his many temples, and no doubt he, like all the other Egyptian kings, came to the Sudan for its gold treasures. Plans of his gold mines have been found, some of them seem to have been in the Sudan. If so, it is probable they are among those that are now being reworked.

In the neighbourhood of the temple are situated the ruins of a city on an artificial platform, the regular circumvallation of which is well preserved, and from which there is an extensive view of the forts and mounds of lost towns around. This district is enclosed by an encircling bend of the river, and travellers would be led across a desert road on the west side to avoid it. Hoskins, in this way, never saw these interesting ruins, and this hint is given for future travellers' use.



THE MUMMY OF SETI I.
Cairo Museum.

Still going south, we reach HANNEK, at the Third Cataract, passing by more forts and remains of once flourishing cities and large fields of ruins whose names are lost. Some of these forts are picturesquely situated among broken rocks and islands; the place is marked Said Fanti on the maps. Beautiful groves of palm trees here afford pleasant shade from the day's heat, and add to the almost romantic scenery. There are high

mountains here, one especially notable, Jebel Ali Borsi, called from an Arab hero.

The THIRD CATARACT, when the Nile is low, impedes navigation for many miles. The river is full of islands, many of which are capable of being well cultivated.

Opposite Hannek is Tombos Island with extensive ancient granite quarries. In one of these there still lies a colossal statue of a king of the XIIIth Dynasty, c. 2500 B.C., which seems never to have been finished.



TOMBOS ISLAND: UNFINISHED COLOSSES IN A GRANITE QUARRY.

Hoskins.

This reminds one of the unfinished obelisk lying in the quarry at Assuan. The stone here is red granite, and there is no doubt that the two colossi on Argo island, some twenty miles further south, were worked in this quarry also. These three statues are of the XIIIth Dynasty, 700 years earlier than the time of Seti, whose temple is described above.

Near Koya, on the west bank, are fields of ruins, denoting ancient cities as yet unexplored whose names are lost. On the east bank, near the Cataract, we find at Kerma the end of the old railway from Halfa, which is now threatened with removal. North of Kerma there are the remains of enormous ancient granite bridges, which evidently belonged to a great city, on the east side of the river. The ruins are spread over the plain, and its immense ancient cemetery adjoins them. Two large masses of ruined brickwork are conspicuous, one of which is called Kerman, the other Defûfa. Each has an ante-temple attached, yet they are not pyramids but very ancient Egyptian strongholds. These are built of ancient Nile (unburnt) bricks. They resemble the ancient Egyptian forts near El Kab in Egypt.



YOUNG LION FROM THE SUDAN, PRESENTED TO THE ZOOLOGICAL GARDENS, DUBLIN, BY SIR R. SLATIN.

Many fragments of statues are lying about and hieroglyph inscriptions in the best Egyptian style. Lepsius thought these

proved this to have been the oldest important Egyptian settlement on Ethiopian ground, and the granite bridges to have belonged to it.

There are many inscriptions on the rocks near the river, some bear the cartouches of the XVIIIth Dynasty, and an inscription of eighteen lines bears the date of the second year of THOTHMES I. (c. 1540 B.C.), and on another tablet adjoining the cartouche of AMENHOTEP III. (c. 1414 B.C.).

The country near Hannek was very pleasing in Hoskins's time, flat and fertile. The luxuriousness of the vegetation on the islands, the acacias, the picturesque groups of palm trees, the masses of rock impeding the current, and varying the tint of the river by the white surges they create, and in the distance the yellow sands, formed altogether a soft and lovely landscape. The beauty of the First Cataract has been improved off the face of the earth. The Second Cataract remains till some future Willcocks dams its

grandeur. But here, in a locality belonging to our nation, is scenery more beautiful than either First or Second Cataracts, were we only enabled to visit it. Were some facilities afforded it would have its thousands of visitors annually. The land has been closed to travellers for several generations; now that it is at peace, and in our hands, it offers temptations for the artist as well as the antiquarian, which it is hoped may be soon made available.

The soil in this region is the best and most fertile in the whole Sudan. Hoskins speaks of great quantities of indigo plantations hereabouts in his time, and 500 water-wheels employed in its cultivation on the great Isle of Argo, which we are now approaching. It has been swept with war and Dervish oppression since then, but now that is gone for ever, the fertile land will be all the richer for the rest, and the population will return. The rapid natural increase of the sturdy people in times of peace, and with none to enslave them, or make them afraid,



ISLE OF ARGO : SOUTH COLOSSUS FROM THE SOUTH.

Cailland.

will soon provide the population the land had in ancient times, which it is quite fit to support. Of course this will be helped by improved irrigation.

Hoskins describes the Isle of Argo as very fertile, covered with palms, sycamores, and pastures, with much cattle and horses, but only partially cultivated. It is about 25 miles long and 5 broad, and abounds with hares, pigeons, quail and partridges. There are many ancient ruins, which have never been properly explored. The most important remains are the two colossal statues of SEBEKHOTEP III. of the XIIIth Dynasty (c. 2400 B.C.). They lie prostrate, and at some distance from one another, as if they had been ready to remove elsewhere.

Both statues are of excellent workmanship, and about 25 feet high. They are of granite, and were brought from the quarry in the island of Tombos, 20 miles or more to the north. They evidently stood before some neighbouring temple ruins. There is also a small seated statue of the same king, and inscriptions of his

date; also figures of baboons of a much later period. The island at this early date must have had crowds of inhabitants, and the very moving and erection of these great figures must have been done both by numbers and with skilled labour. Monuments of the same Egyptian king have been found at Tanis in the Delta, 1,000 miles distant, showing the extent of his rule. This island and the neighbouring region teems with antiquities, which have never been properly investigated.

DONGOLA, known by the natives as El Orde (the camp), is marked New Dongola on the map,¹ to distinguish it from Old Dongola, about 90 miles further south along the river on the right bank, which is now a mass of ruins. New Dongola is still an important town, on the left bank, and high above the inundation. It has Government offices, a good bazaar, and several thousand inhabitants. It was founded in 1822, the Mamelukes having destroyed Old Dongola in 1820. This was the great centre of the slave trade, and as late as sixty years ago caravans of wretched creatures brought across



ISLE OF ARGO : NORTHERN COLOSSUS FROM THE SOUTH.

Caillaud.

desert from Kordofan, Sennar, and Abyssinia met here for distribution of their human goods among dealers, who forwarded them on to Cairo. Hoskins describes the cruel treatment to which he saw them exposed, and this went on till Gordon's time, and to our own days. Now it is a thing of the past, we may fervently hope, as our conquest of the Sudan makes slave dealing and slave trading illegal under the British flag.

Khandak is the first modern place we have depicted, as the antiquities have demanded all our space. This is a thriving place, the headquarters of the Mamuria. It is built on an elevation overlooking the river, and is 8½ hours' steaming from Dongola. There is much wood in the district and 440 sakias (native water-wheels), each supporting four families. The large fort in the middle of the town commands the river. It is now in ruins, but is still an important feature commanding, as it

¹ New Dongola was the military base of the unsuccessful British expedition to relieve Gordon in 1884. The last of the garrison was withdrawn in 1886, and the place abandoned to the Dervishes.

does, the desert passage to Merawi as well as the river. It has a small bazaar. Colonel Penton bought some scarabs at this bazaar, which he gave me; they are genuine, but late in date, about 500 B.C.

A populous district lies between New and Old Dongola, but it has not been explored for antiquities. Old Dongola has a picturesque situation, with its fortifications, on a rock 500 feet high, but now shelters only a few miserable inhabitants. It was formerly the capital of the great Christian Empire of Ethiopia, and judging from its ruins must have been a great and prosperous place 600 years ago. Upon a mountain near the ruins stands a mosque, from which there is a delightful prospect all around. An Arabic inscription at this mosque tells how the Christians were wiped out by the Moslem conquerors. This marble record states that the building was opened "on



KHANDAQ, DONGOLA MUDIRIA.

Major Phipps.

the 20th Rabi el Aneh in the year 717 (1st June, 1317), after the victory of Safeddin Abdallah el Nisr over the Infidels." The ruins of Christian churches exist all over the Sudan, but not one was in existence in the whole country when we conquered the land, showing how "the infidels" had been exterminated by the Moslem conquerors.

A few words as to modern events in these remote places by the winding Nile's banks. These regions are quiet now, quiet as the grave, in ancient times stirring localities. But even in our own time, they have been the scenes of sharp combats in the checking of the Mahdist revolt. An attempt was made to establish a loyal native government at Dongola, in 1885, when the Egyptian expedition retired. The natives were against the Mahdists, but fell to pieces on the advance of the enemy. The Anglo-Egyptian troops were encamped along the river. There were 1,700 British, and 1,500 Egyptians. Sir F. Stephenson gave the Dervishes a decisive beating at Ginnis, in December, 1885. Abdulhazid, their leader, was wounded, and the trouble ceased for a time. But in 1886, the frontier was moved to Halfa, and the Dervishes contented themselves with tearing up the railway line, and raiding the villages of friendlies. The British soldiers were now withdrawn,

and Halfa was left to be defended by the Egyptian garrison alone. We have seen how Lord Grenfell turned them to account at Toski in 1889. Sir H. Kitchener became Sirdar in 1892, and at once set himself to the task of preparation "to smash the Mahdi"—the legacy left us by Gordon. The native army, which owes its reconstruction to Sir Evelyn Wood's labours from 1883, had at Toski shown itself reliable, and was now becoming a brave force, fit to expel the foe, when well led.

In June, 1896, Kitchener surprised and almost annihilated the Dervishes at Firket. Dongola was reoccupied in September, 1896, the enemy having bolted on the advance of our troops. Sir Archibald Hunter was made governor of Dongola province, for a time, till the orders came for the advance on Khartoum.

From Old Dongola to Merawi, the course of the Nile, describing a semicircle of about 100 miles, turns to the north. Many ancient forts are passed, and at Jebel Deka, on the left bank, the massive walls of a Christian fortress are seen on a projecting sandstone rock, with the remains of several large buildings, among which is a



RUINS OF CHRISTIAN MONASTERY NEAR MAGAL.

Lepsius.

small church (with three aisles), also in ruins. The whole nave rested on four columns and two wall pillars. Many ruined churches of the same type are found in the Sudan.

Not far off at Magâl, on the opposite side of the Nile, there is a much larger Christian church. Among the ruins are monolith granite columns, $13\frac{1}{2}$ feet high, and half-way up a sort of divided capital of 18 inches by 2 feet in diameter. This church had five aisles. Further up the river we come to Bachit, where the rock wall of the desert descends to the Nile, and bears upon it a fortress with 18 semicircular towers of defence. In the interior, under heaps of rubbish, was the ruins of a Christian church, which seemed to have marked the centre of the fortress. The church was almost identical with the one at Deka described above. That an enormous population of Christians must have filled the land before the Moslem conquest is proved by these Christian churches which abound everywhere. In earlier days the land was densely peopled too, as we have already found; and in Moslem times, and down to Mehemet Ali's seizing of the country, it was very populous. Since then it has been on the decline, till our own days, and ruins are found everywhere. I am indebted mainly to Lepsius for the foregoing description of this region, and the architectural details are his.

Six or seven miles south of New Dongola, on the right bank, is a delicate little Egyptian temple, date unknown, in good preservation. I am indebted to Count Gleichen for this information, mentioned in his *Anglo-Egyptian Sudan*.

But I will give the description at greater length, from Count Gleichen's earlier book on the Gordon Expedition, *With the Camel Corps up the Nile*.

"Not long after we had settled at Dongola, an important addition arrived in the shape of Colonel Colborne, who had been acting as correspondent to the *Daily News* with the river column. He at once proceeded to make himself comfortable by living in a house close to the Nile, and mooring his dahabeah alongside. Being of an antiquarian turn of mind, he somehow discovered that there were some remains of a temple four or five miles up stream, and resolved to dig it out. Accordingly, half a dozen of us accompanied him thither, on his dahabeah and in whalers, drank his brandies and sodas—such a luxury—and pretended to be deeply interested in the proceedings.

"To tell the truth, it was a curious place. The only outward signs of it at first were the broken tops of some pillars, all but buried in the sand. So we hired a lot of niggers, and set them to work with shovels. Very soon the pillars began to grow, and the niggers found themselves on the roof of a tiny temple. Digging away all round this, disclosed some interesting hieroglyphics on the walls, and seven or eight feet down, we came on some large figures in relief of gods and goddesses, together with the top of the entrance into the holy place.

"As enough had been done for one day, we returned home, intending to come another time. It so happened that a strong wind blew for the next three days, and when we returned to the place nothing was visible but the broken pillar tops as before: all our labour was buried in the sand drift. As we had no guarantee that the wind wouldn't do it again, we didn't try again, and left the sands to their secret.

"The only other things near the place were dozens of little green copper deities strewn about: it must have been a god-foundry in its day, for in some places there were hundreds of broken crucibles and pieces of pottery and bronze rings, and things green with age. I also picked up a transparent green lizard with big eyes (alive), and what rather astonished me was that he threw off his tail, leaving it curling and wriggling in my hand. I tried to join him and his tail again, but some sand had got in between and it wouldn't stick, so I left him forlornly looking at it."

The mystery of Count Gleichen's lizard I cannot explain, but the temple was (and is) doubtless an Egyptian one of the very best period. Let us hope that the next party of antiquarians may be more successful, for no doubt it will wait for their coming, entombed in the kindly sand, as it has waited for 3,500 years.

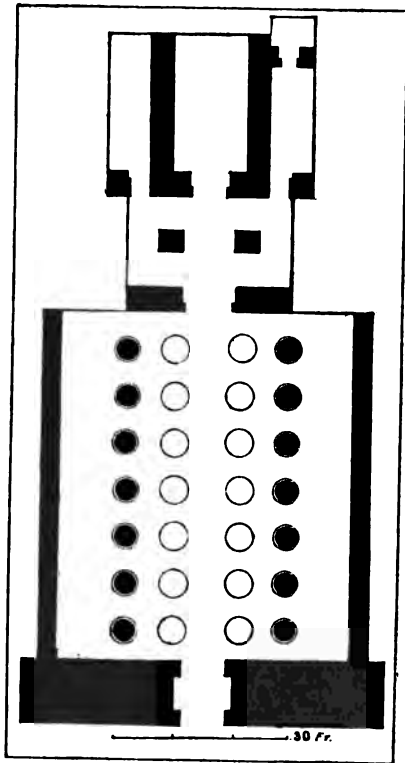
CHAPTER VI.

THE TEMPLES AND PYRAMIDS OF JEBEL BARKAL AND NAPATA.

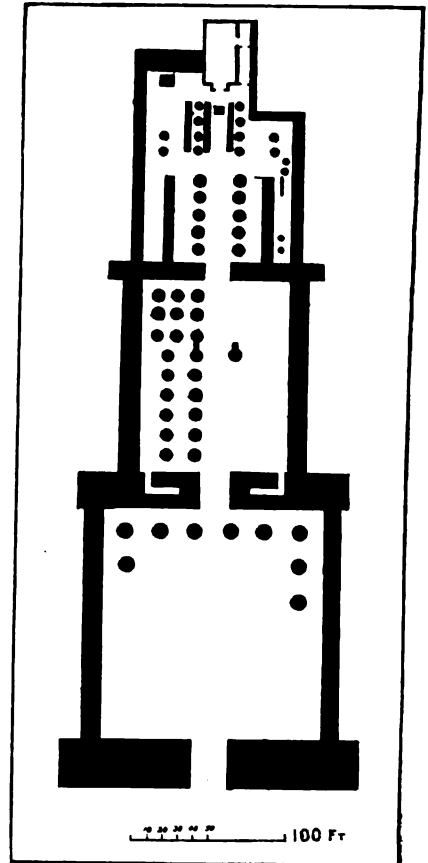


THE COLOSSAL RAM OF AMENHOTEP III. TAKEN TO BERLIN FROM NAPATA BY LEPSIUS.

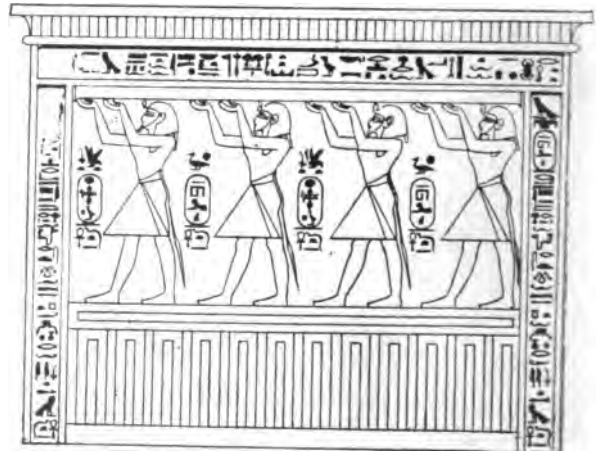
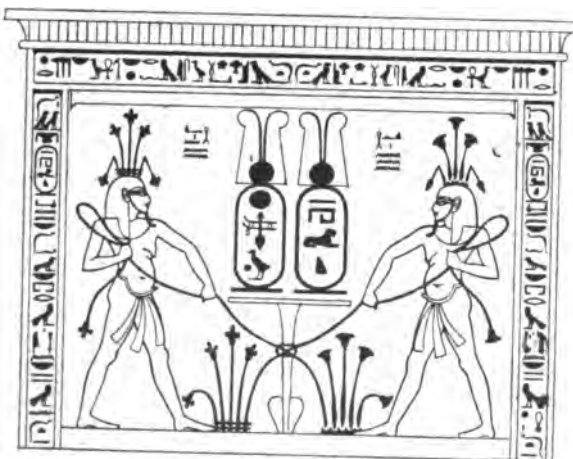
THE STORY OF TAHARQA AND THE HOLY MOUNTAIN, NAPATA.
THE PYRAMIDS OF ZUMA, KURRU, JEBEL BARKAL, NURI, AND TANGASSI.
CHRISTIAN RUINS, FORTRESSES, THE FOURTH CATARACT.



SMALLER TEMPLE.



GREAT TEMPLE.



SCULPTURES IN THE GREAT TEMPLE, JEBEL BARKAL.

CHAPTER VI.

THE PYRAMIDS AND TEMPLES OF NAPATA.

WE now come to the locality of the Pyramids of the Sudan. There are several fields of these ancient monuments—the Pyramids of Zuma and Kurru on the west



SHABAKA.

From Maspero's "*Passing of the Empire*."—S.P.C.K.

bank and Tangassi on the east bank, with those of Nuri and Jebel Barkal twenty miles further up the Nile. There must be a hundred large pyramids and as many smaller with the vestiges of numerous other tombs of similar form. It is difficult to account for this crowd of witnesses to an ancient civilisation and a dense population, for only their princes were deemed worthy of the honour of a pyramid for their last resting-place. The neighbourhood of Napata was always regarded as a sacred spot, long before Taharqa chose it as his own. Doubtless the XIIth Dynasty Kings, Useratesen and Amenemhat, had forts and temples here. Amenhotep and Tyi of the XVIIIth Dynasty, were not likely to neglect the neighbourhood of the "Holy Mountain."

About 1,000 years B.C. a great awakening came upon Napata. From some cause unknown the kings of the XXIInd Dynasty had quarrelled with the prince-priest of Thebes, and he and many of his priests migrated to Napata, there to found a new Thebes, and spread the worship of Amon. This drew the attention of Nubian princes to Egypt, and Piankhi, an Ethiopian, led an army into Egypt and conquered it. Piankhi wrote the story of his prowess on a great stone monument, which is in Cairo Museum. This was about 700 B.C.

After that, Ethiopian princes ruled Egypt—the XXVth Dynasty, about 690 B.C., Shabaka, Shabataka, and Taharqa came to the throne successively. I found a scarab of Tirhaka¹ at Thebes, near a temple he had restored, the smaller one at Medinet Habu. It has the cartouche of Piankhi joined with that of Taharqa, showing that he claimed descent from Piankhi. There are many memorials left at Jebel Barkal of Taharqa and Piankhi. There ought to be also remains of works by all the kings named above, and doubtless proper investigation would find them. Petrie discovered in Egypt, in a most unpromising-looking

PIANKHI-TAHARQA.



SCARAB OF TAHARQA FROM THEBES, WITH DOUBLE CARTOUCHE. TAHARQA AND PIANKHI.

¹ Various renderings of the same name.

place, the desert behind Abydos, all the lost tombs of the early kings of Egypt of the Ist and IInd Dynasties. Another Petrie, if he were to search here, might find quite as much of unknown history, and fill up many gaps.

Taharqa left his mark all over Egypt, but came home here to die at his native place, and doubtless Piankhi left full records of his deeds in his native Napata.

The different angle of the southern pyramids from those of Egypt is at once seen, and is difficult to account for. Many of the Nubian pyramids seem to have had an upper chamber, which never is found in the Egyptian. Whether these had subterranean chambers we do not know, as no proper examination has been made; in fact, everything connected with the Ethiopian monuments, temples and tombs is an unsolved problem. Nor has any information been given as to whether the bodies interred were mummified or otherwise.



TAHARQA.

From Maspero's "*Passing of the Empires*,"—S.P.C.K.

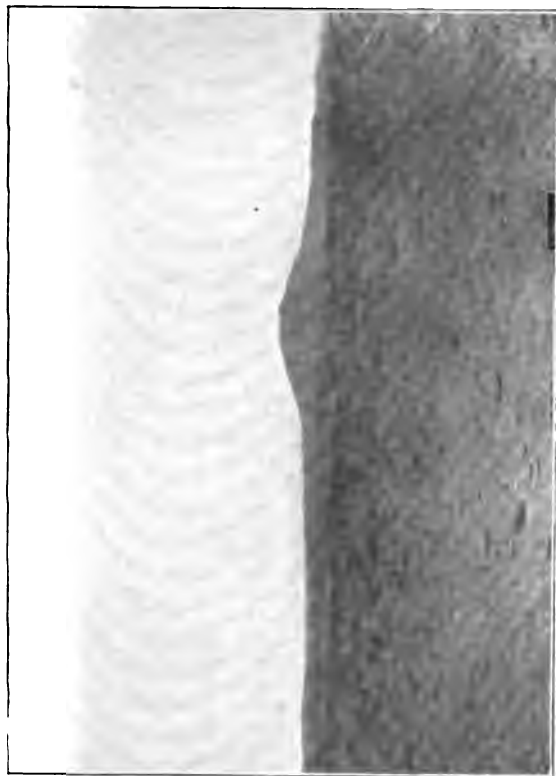
The universal vulgar belief exists that ancient tombs and pyramids always contained treasure. Lepsius tells us that even the Pashas and Mudirs, and all the natives, constantly asked him how much gold he had found in the search for antiquities. This wide-spread belief among all classes of natives and officials, accounts for the fact of every pyramid, especially the larger ones, being in a ruined state, and of some only foundations remain. The fact that treasures were found in some of those at Meroë in the last century no doubt excited the cupidity of the natives, and it is to be feared will produce the ruin of the pyramids, unless means are taken by the Government for their protection.

Near the village of Zuma rises an old fortress with towers of defence, the outer walls of which were destroyed about a century ago.

At Zuma there are three pyramids near together, and then further on, there are the ruins of thirty pyramids, and the quarries from which they were constructed are close at hand. Eight of these pyramids were about 20 feet high, and are the most ruined.

There are traditions here that the Nile once reached and fertilized this region, which is now covered with drifting sand. Of course, the wearing down of the Cataracts, the natural dams, may account for this, but weirs could no doubt be easily constructed to give a supply of water for irrigation and restore the country to its old fertility.

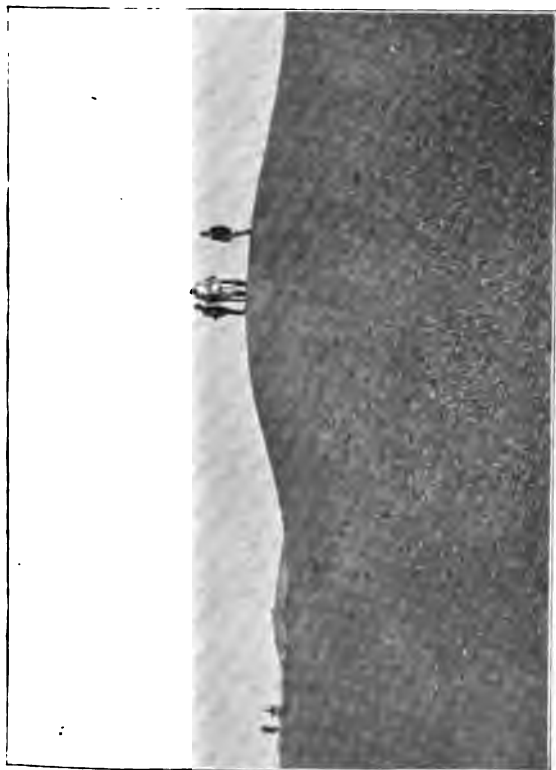
At Kurru, on the right bank, several miles further on, are the ruins of no less than twenty-three pyramids (named Quntur) two being 35 feet high, well built of sandstone; others are of black basalt. Westward of all is found the ground plan of a large massive stone pyramid, whose foundation is in the rock. Lepsius considered that this pyramid belonged to the royal Dynasty of Napata, its solid architecture distinguishing it from all the others. Again, several hours' journey, at Tangassi, on the opposite shore,



KERRERI BATTLEFIELD, 2ND SEPTEMBER, 1898, 6 A.M.



THE DERVISH FORT AT THE MUKRAM, KHARTOUM, 1898.



BATTLE OF KERRERI. KITCHENER EXAMINING COUNTRY FROM HILL TOP.



BLUE NILE AND WHITE NILE. FLEET AT ANCHOR OFF OMDURMAN.

building an English Protestant Church at Khartoum. When mentioning this, I may as well call attention to the need for this church. The service has at present to be held in one of the rooms of the Palace, as sufficient money has not been received to build a church suitable for the capital of the Anglo-Egyptian Sudan. The government has given an excellent site, free of all rent for ever. There should be enough enthusiasm yet remaining for the hero Gordon, to erect a suitable Christian church at the scene of his martyrdom. But the greater events of South Africa seemed to make the needs of the model city of the Sudan quite forgotten. There is yet time to remedy this—the Treasurer, Lady Wingate, the Palace, Khartoum, is the address for subscriptions.

Omdurman is only seven miles due south from the battlefield. The conical hill which rises in the centre of the plain of Kerreri, is the best point of view. Here we can see beneath our feet the course of “the lost battle borne down by the flying” all the

way to the great, mean, straggling Dervish capital.

At its best, Omdurman always had, for European eyes, a mean appearance. It covers an enormous space $5\frac{1}{2}$ miles by $1\frac{1}{2}$ deep following the course of the river throughout. Two or three wide streets traverse it, but the whole is a network of twisting lanes. When



BATTLE OF OMDURMAN, 1898. A SNAPSHOT.

we entered it, the whole place was in a state of indescribable filth. Corpses of men and animals lying unburied, open cess-pits, merely holes sunk in the sand or mud open to the burning sun, caused a horrible stench among the lanes. A few of the principal houses were well built, principally those of the Khalifa and Yakub, and the Beit el Amana, or Dervish Storehouse, had strong walls, as had also the prisons, where the wretches were huddled together without food except for what they could buy; and those that had no money to buy food were left to die. Within the Beit el Amana, when I saw it, was a collection of ancient armour, obsolete guns, and mitrailleuses the Dervishes had tried to repair, with piles of cast-iron bullets lying beside them; quantities of sabre-proof (woollen padded) helmets, scimitars, daggers, bayonets, rusty muskets, jibbas or Dervish uniforms in gaudy patched barbaric style; rickety horse pistols, flint guns, and matchlocks, shields of rhinoceros



EN ROUTE TO OMDURMAN, 1898—NEARING KHARTOUM.



ERECTING THE MONUMENT TO THE 21ST LANCERS, KERRERI.



IN CAMP, EN ROUTE TO OMDURMAN.



THE KHOR WHERE 21ST LANCERS WERE ATTACKED, KERRERI.



PORCH OF KHALIFA'S HOUSE, OMDURMAN.

Near this, let into the wall of the narrow lane outside, we find a marble tablet with this inscription:—

HUBERT HOWARD

DIED HERE

II SEPTEMBER, 1898.

This was the youthful son of the Earl of Carlisle, who was correspondent of the *Times* with the army of Kitchener. He was with the early pursuers of the Dervishes, from Kerreri battlefield, and was making some notes or sketches here, when he was accidentally killed by the splinter of a shell, when the conquerors were firing on the Mahdi's tomb, near the place. I had seen him at Castle Howard, a bright and handsome boy, a few years before. I met his father, Lord Carlisle, later in Egypt on his way to visit the scene of his son's death and erect this monument. The fine young fellow was a great favourite with all his friends in the Sirdar's army.

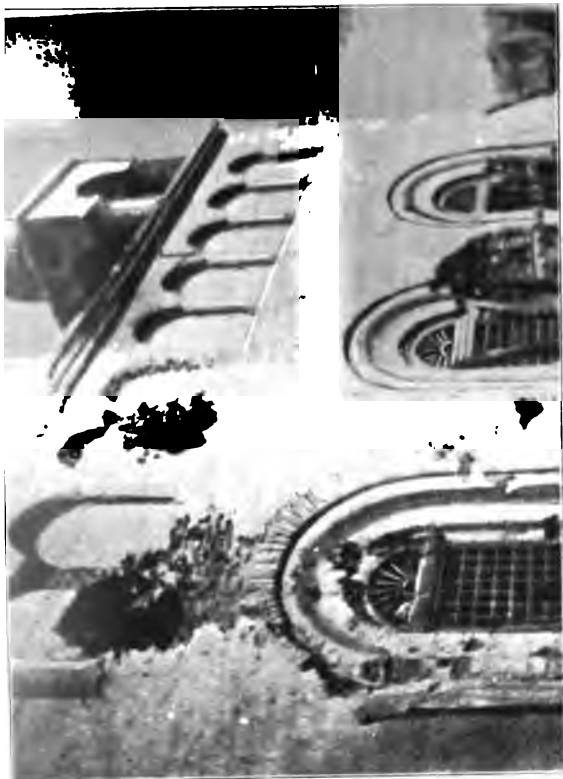
The dome of the Mahdi's tomb was a conspicuous mark for the centre of Omdurman; it was frequently struck by the British shells, and quite ruined. It was necessary to do this it as it would have become

hide, ancient sandals and leggings, all piled in confusion together.

The mosque was a mean building in a large enclosure, full of poor houses scarcely fit for pig styes; the Khalifa's house, the best in the place, with a kind of audience hall and sheltered dais with two wooden columns supporting the overhanging roof, still survives. His women's apartments were very bare, but when hung with rugs and carpets, may have been comfortable enough.



THE MAHDI'S TOMB AS IT WAS.



THE MAHDI'S TOMB AFTER BOMBARDMENT, 2ND SEPT., 1898.



INSIDE THE MAHDI'S TOMB ON 2ND SEPT., 1898.



THE KHALIFA'S SCAFFOLDS, MARKET PLACE, OMDURMAN, 3RD SEPT., 1898.



FINDING THE BLACK FLAG OF THE KHALIFA.

a shrine for fanatical pilgrimages where the superstitious natives would have worshipped. The tomb of Gordon's murderer, the wretch who sent the hero's gory head in a bag to the prison to be thrown at Slatin's feet, had to be destroyed by his avengers. The Mahdi was such a ferocious, brutal, sensual wretch, that his memory is best wiped out, and every trace of his existence erased.

He had proclaimed himself immortal, yet one of the women whom he had injured poisoned him in June, 1885. On his deathbed he named four of his relatives or friends to be Khalifas, to succeed him in succession. These Khalifas asserted, as the Mahdi had done, that they bore charmed lives, and were invulnerable. All are dead now; not one of these men seemed to possess a single virtue, save that of desperate valour when under the influence of fanatical excitement.

The sufferers under their horrible tyranny were their own people; while they killed



THE KHALIFA'S CARRIAGE.

Captain Sholto Douglas, R.E.

the men who in any way opposed them, the women were spared to suffer even worse treatment.

All this proves that it was right and proper to wreck the Mahdi's tomb, though at the time there were not wanting humanitarians to blame Lord Kitchener for destroying the "sanctuaries" of Omdurman. Every-

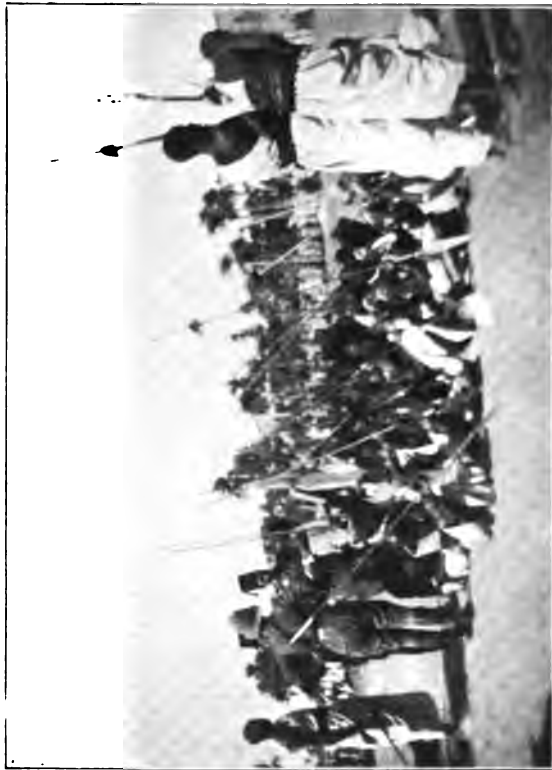
where the natives welcomed him as their deliverer, especially the negro races, for the real object of Mahdism was the prosecution of the nefarious traffic in slaves, which Gordon had abolished. Black and white now are all, under the protection of the British flag, as free as if they had been born in England. The retribution which we were called upon to visit on Mahdism has brought about the salvation of the country.

He stamped only before your walls, and the tomb ye knew was dust;
He gathered up under his armpits all the swords of your trust;
He set a guard on your granaries, securing the weak from the strong,
He said, "Go work the waterwheels, that were abolished so long."

Kipling.



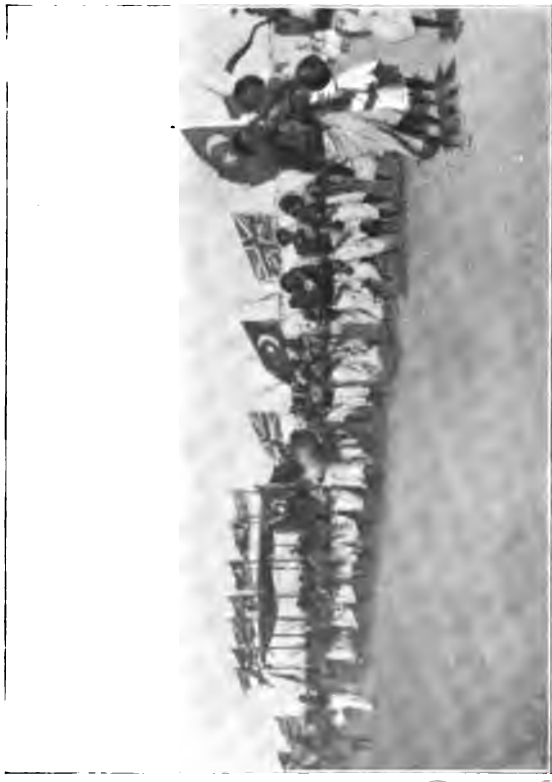
KHEDIVE'S VISIT, 1900. LANDING STAGE, OMDURMAN.



SHILLUK WARRIORS RESTING AFTER SHAM FIGHT.



H.H. THE KHEDIVE ON S. G. STEAMER "IBIS."



SHILLUK WAR DANCE BEFORE THE KHEDIVE.

THE OMDURMAN OF TO-DAY.

Our narrative has led us to Omdurman with Kitchener's victorious army. There was no Khartoum then, it had been wiped out for ever, so thought Gordon's murderer and his blood-thirsty, destroying crew, little thinking that it would arise phoenix-like from its ashes, the fairest city in Central Africa. (See Chapter IX.)

Before quitting Omdurman we may describe its appearance to-day. It has no pretensions to beauty, it is a mean grovelling Arab town, and its general plan remains the same as when the Dervishes held it.

Now it is clean, swept and garnished, with good houses, and the streets policed and decently kept. There are many good shops, mostly kept by Greek merchants, and here the principal trade of the Sudan is carried on—gum, ivory, and ostrich feathers.

When I was there, a mile of the sloping beach was devoted to the drying and sorting of gum. This was done by little circles of women, working with deft fingers, skilfully arranging the various classes and qualities. All these poor souls were Dervish "widows," widowed or deserted by their lords on the destruction of the Dervish power. Their ugly, but very contented, faces seemed to denote that they were very happy on their wage of two piastres a day, and no husbands to support.

Seeing the name of Cavvadias in Greek letters over one of the largest warehouses, I entered and



OMDURMAN. THE LIPTON OF THE MARKET.

asked if the owner was any relation of the celebrated Ephor of Athens (Minister of Art in Greece); the owner came forward and told me he was the youngest of a large family in Cephalonia, the eldest of which had risen to the high position of my friend in Athens. He asked me to be present at the ceremony of laying the first stone of his firm's new warehouse, a handsome building in Khartoum. I have met the Ephor of Athens since then and told him of my meeting with his brother in the Sudan. They had not met for many years and he was delighted to hear tidings of him from one who had seen him.



PETS—GAZELLES, DEMOISELLES, GOLD-CRESTED CRANES, ETC.



THE NOON-DAY DRINK AROUND THE WELLS.



Davidson.

THE GRAND SQUARE, OMDURMAN.



FEAST OF KURBAN BEIRAM.



OMDURMAN. A RELIGIOUS PROCESSION OF SHEIKHS AND VARIOUS TRADERS.

his house, substantially, and planted a palm in the centre of his little courtyard. There were no trees in Omdurman, so this is a wise innovation, and by this time he will no doubt be sitting under its shade, for vegetation is rapid here. I was much interested in this sweet-voiced, amiable gentleman. Remarking on the hardships of his passage through 800 miles of desert in an enemy's country, he said "but my sufferings were as nothing compared with those of the poor ladies ; I wonder they ever survived their trials."

He now occupies himself in teaching school, and he told me that most of his several hundred pupils were the children of his former acquaintances in the town, and he had as many as he could teach. They will learn nothing

I suppose all my readers have heard of Father Ohrwald er, whose wonderful story of escape from the Mahdi's clutches, along with two Austrian Sisters of Mercy, has been so ably edited by Sir Reginald Wingate. I heard that he had returned to Omdurman, and paid him a visit. He has rebuilt



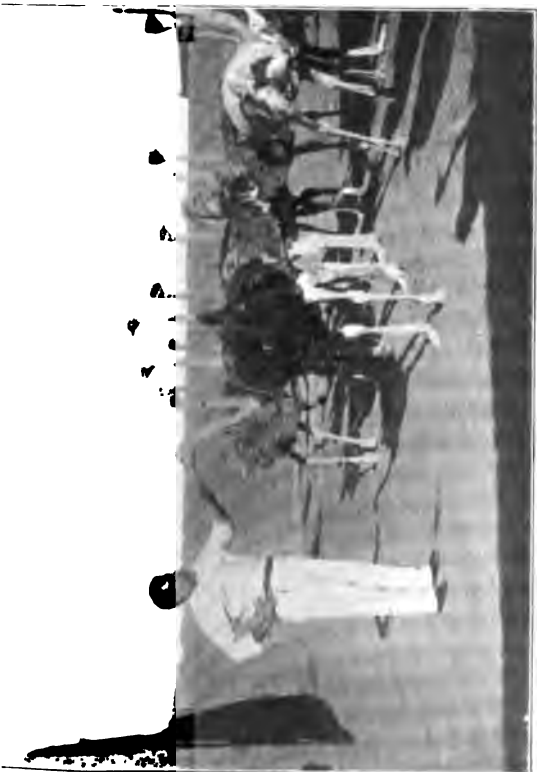
AN OX FROM THE WHITE NILE.



PARTY PREPARING TO VISIT THE KERRERI BATTLEFIELD.



WELL-BEHAVED OMDURMAN, 1904.



YOUNG OSTRICHES, OMDURMAN.



GENERAL THE HON. R. TALBOT ON THE TOP OF JEBEL SURGHAN, CENTRE OF BATTLEFIELD.

but good from their association with Father Ohrwalder. He had his portrait taken at my request. (See Chapter IX.) He is only fifty years old, but wears a look of greater age owing to his sufferings; everyone, native and immigrant, poor or rich, loves and esteems the good man. He speaks all their languages, as well as English, Italian and French, and of course his own native German. He adores the English, and intends to spend his life under our protection.

Sir Rudolf von Slatin I did not see on this occasion. He was away on one of his frequent tours, as Inspector-General of the Sudan, through the remote provinces. The



SIR RUDOLF VON SLATIN, 1898.

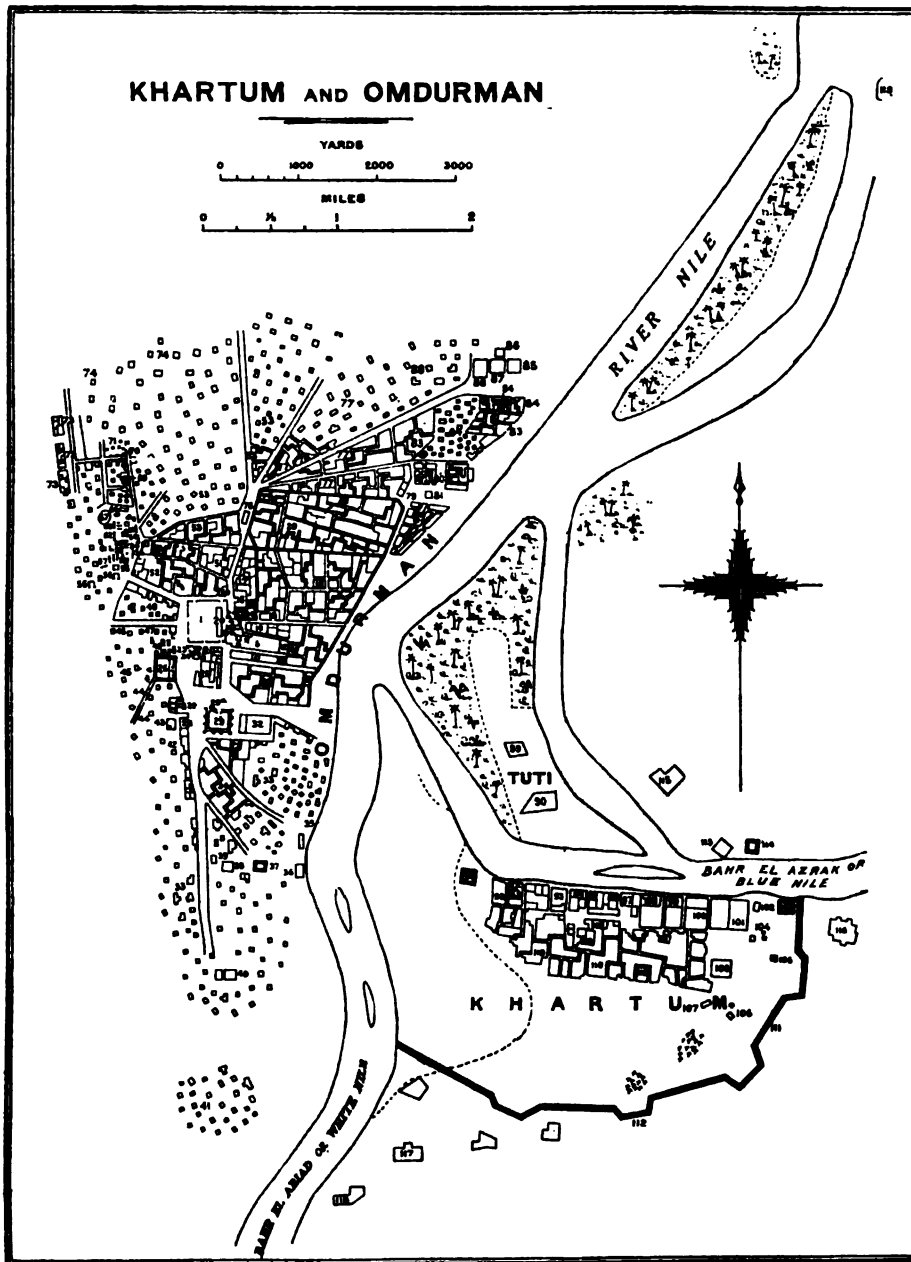
tidings that these two fugitives from the Mahdi brought to our clever Intelligence Officer of those days (now the Sirdar and Governor-General of the Sudan) mainly contributed to our conquest of the Sudan. And it is equally certain that neither Ohrwalder or Slatin would ever have been able to escape from the Khalifa's clutches, but by the "underground railway" manipulated by the astute Sir Reginald Wingate.

I give a characteristic good portrait of Slatin, taken by Sir Reginald Wingate in the stirring times of 1898. Slatin was the leader and guide of the expedition; he knew every spot. To show what Omdurman and Khartoum were like in those days I append a plan, which was published in Count Gleichen's *Sudan Handbook* of 1895, published for the use of our army.

The information was derived mainly from Sir Rudolf von Slatin, who knew the places so well that he was able to make the map from memory. The plan of Omdurman is good for to-day as to the main irregularities of the old town. Now it is being altered greatly and prepared for the use of electric tramways!

The wide extent of Dervish Omdurman is accounted for by its having had 400,000 inhabitants within its earthworks. It has now but 48,000, but is increasing. It lies on good gravel foundation, and should be a healthy place. It had a bad reputation for health in Dervish days, but the filthy dwellings of the people were sufficient to account for that, and the fact that the refuse and offal was allowed to

MAP OF KHARTOUM AND OMDURMAN IN GORDON'S TIME.



OMDURMAN AND KHARTOUM ABOUT 1890. FACSIMILE OF THE MAP IN COUNT GLEICHEN'S "HANDBOOK."

Principally from information supplied by Slatin. The Khartoum shown is Gordon's city, with his fortifications. The map shows the relative positions of the two towns.



CAMEL FAIR, OMDURMAN.

Lord William Cecil.

accumulate, would intensify any outbreak of disease. It is now, under British management, a most healthy place for the greater part of the year.

The scene on a market-day at Omdurman is busy and picturesque. The varied breeds of cattle and sheep show of late great improvement, and

Omdurman bids fair to be the great depôt for cattle of the Sudan. The camel fair is very interesting, the baby camels being playful while soft and gentle in manner, and much dependent on their gaunt, bad-tempered mothers. The mixture of tribes who attend these fairs is quite as varied and as extraordinary as the animals. The styles of hair-dressing are most elaborate and some of them are the work of years. It is mainly the males who take such trouble in their *chevelure*, the belles have a style of their own which requires more time to develop than would be expected, but is kept in order by profuse indulgence in castor oil.

When I was at Omdurman a distinguished soldier showed me much politeness. I had travelled in his company from Cairo. This was Colonel Fergusson, then the Commander of the Garrison and District of Omdurman. He had been in many tough fights since he joined the Egyptian army in 1896. In fact he was in every important engagement. He is now Colonel of the Grenadier Guards. I have to thank him for much valuable information in the compiling of this volume.

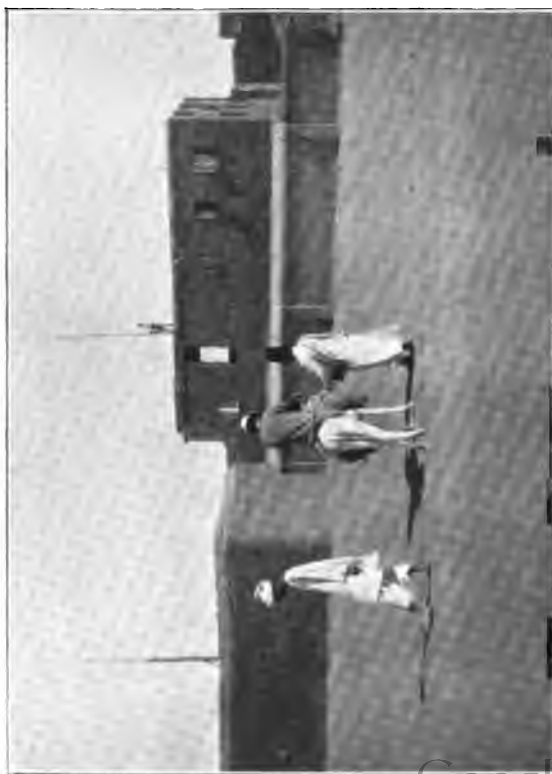


SHEEP MARKET, OMDURMAN.

Mr. W. A. Cecil.



THE DOORWAY LEADING TO THE EUROPEAN PRISONERS' QUARTERS,
OMDURMAN, 3RD SEPTEMBER, 1898.



THE ADVANCE OF THE CAMERA, OMDURMAN. THE KHALIFA'S HOUSE.



THE CITY OF THE KHALIFA LOOKING TOWARDS KERRA.



OMDURMAN : WOMAN AT A WELL.



MARKET, OMDURMAN. THE COBBLER.



SHIPBUILDING YARD AT OMDURMAN.



VEGETABLE MARKET, OMDURMAN.



OMDURMAN.



A SHILLUK : NECKLACE OF HAIR FROM ELEPHANT'S TAIL.



SHILLUK HAIRDRESSING. Major Gwynn. No. 21.



A SUDANESE BELLE.



AN AFRICAN APOLLO. HIS HAIR IS ALL HIS OWN AND IS THE WORK OF YEARS.



THE GRAIN MARKET, OMDURMAN.



THE FIRST AGRICULTURAL SHOW AT KHARTOUM, "ANTIKA" BOOTH IN CENTRE.

CHAPTER IX.

GORDON'S NATIONAL MONUMENT—THE NEW KHARTOUM.



WHERE GORDON FELL. DIVINE SERVICE HELD ON THE SPOT ON 4TH SEPTEMBER, 1898.

From the picture by R. C. Woodcote, the property of the King, copied by special permission of the Lord Chamberlain.

THE NEW CITY. THE GOVERNOR-GENERAL'S PALACE. THE GORDON COLLEGE.
THE MEMORIAL SERVICE TO GORDON. GORDON'S STATUE. NATIVE VILLAGES. SUDAN CLUB.
BANK OF EGYPT. ZOOLOGICAL GARDENS. EXCURSION TO SOBA.



Ripinald Wingate



PALM GROVES, KHARTOUM.

CHAPTER IX.

THE NEW KHARTOUM.

THE model city of Central Africa is on the Blue Nile, about three miles from Omdurman, which is on the White Nile. It is a great contrast to the Dervish town in every way. To begin with, what strikes us when arriving is that it is embosomed in a grove



JUNCTION OF WHITE NILE AND BLUE NILE, KHARTOUM. *Sir R. Wingate.*

of well grown trees. The Dervishes when they sacked and burnt the Governor's House and all the other buildings in the place, forgot to destroy the trees. Even those planted by Gordon's own hands still flourish, and behind the main building of the new Palace, the hero's rose-beds still exist, having been found underneath the ruins of his residency. I have been told that

some of the roses that now flourish exceedingly arose from the roots of Gordon's own plants which still remain in the ground; this may be a stretch of the imagination, but it is possibly true.

Khartoum is quite a modern place, having been founded by Mehemet Ali as the seat of the Governor-General about 1830, and stands in a fine, high and healthy situation. The promontory on which it is built stretches between the two Niles like an "Elephant's Trunk," the meaning of the native name.

When Kitchener crossed over to the ruins of Khartoum, immediately after the Battle of Omdurman, he found the place a tangle of weeds and



GORDON'S PALACE RUINS.

Lt. Col. Penton.

demolished houses, and not a living creature in the ruins. Of Gordon's Government House there were only some ruined walls. One of Gordon's old guards was found who



RUINS OF THE PALACE AND GORDON'S GARDEN, 4TH SEPTEMBER, 1898.
The gunboat commanded by Gordon's nephew is seen in the centre over the ruins.

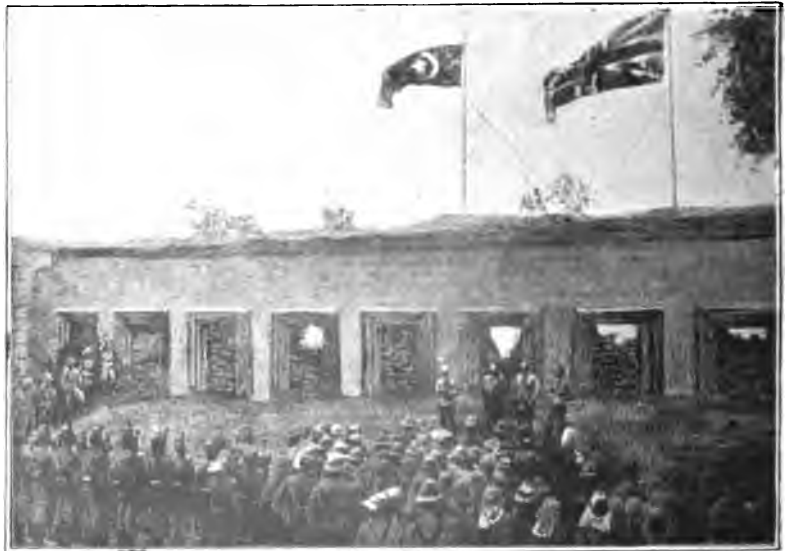
had stood by his master at the last moment. He had been badly wounded at the time of the massacre, feigned death and so escaped. This man pointed out the spot where the hero had been hacked to pieces.

On this spot Kitchener at once made arrangements for holding a religious service to Gordon's memory—
4th September, 1898.

This was called the second funeral of Gordon, and was conducted with much solemnity, all the troops, native and British, crowding round with uncovered heads. The service was conducted by three British clergymen, Church of England, Presbyterian, Roman Catholic, and was most impressive.

Foreign attachés were there, notable among them being the Count von Tiedemann in his magnificent uniform of the White Cuirassiers. It was remarked that he and many others were much affected during the ceremony.

The banners of England and of Egypt overhead were



HOISTING BRITISH AND EGYPTIAN FLAGS, KHARTOUM, 4TH SEPT., 1898.



BARON VON TIEDEMANN, GERMAN MILITARY ATTACHÉ.



SIR H. RAWLINSON.



COMMANDER KEPPEL, R.M. EXPEDITION OF 1898.



COLONEL ROGERS, E.A.



KHARTOUM: SOUTH VERANDAH OF PALACE.

ruined walls. Minute guns were fired from it while the ceremony proceeded. An excellent picture of this ceremony, from photographs taken at the time and information supplied by Sir Reginald Wingate, is now the property of the King. I have been graciously permitted to have the picture copied for this chapter. The day after, a large body of men were set vigorously to work to clear out the palace ruins for the new structure which at once began to arise from the scene of desolation.

In order to convince the native population of the reality of the conquest, and of our determination for the permanent occupation of the country, Lord Kitchener, after his victory, at once set about to rebuild Khartoum, on a splendid scale, and he, it is said, himself drew out on the sand his plan for rebuilding Gordon's

displayed floating side by side.

The playing and singing of "God save the Queen," made the ceremonial into a dedication of the conquered land to the protection of Great Britain.

During the ceremony the gunboat *Melik*, commanded by Gordon's nephew, was moored outside. Being high Nile it was seen over the



SUDAN CLUB GARDENS, KHARTOUM.

Davidson.



RUINS OF KHARTOUM, 4TH SEPTEMBER, 1898.



RUINS OF OLD KHARTOUM : HOUSES OF LEADING MEN.



DISTANT VIEW OF KHARTOUM FROM THE WHITE NILE IN FLOOD



THE GUNBOAT "SHEIKH" ON WHITE NILE.



THE BANK OF EGYPT, KHARTOUM.

Davidson.

city. The idea was that the design should show the lines of a collection of Union Jacks.

Lord Kitchener was indefatigable in hurrying on the development of Khartoum, and the reconstruction of the government of the conquered country was taken in hand at once.

There was not time to send to London for plans for the buildings, and so the Royal Engineer officers did the best they could. Colonel Gorringe, it is said, designed the

Palace, and a most effective and elegant building it is. It is well adapted for a sunny climate, and is one of the most beautiful buildings of its kind, of entirely original design. The plain river front accentuates the beauty of the elegant southern façade.

The grand scale on which the new city was conceived, and its fine situation, are combining to make modern Khartoum a city to be proud of. The Palace is in the centre of the town and is surrounded by a spacious garden, with groves of stately palms and other fine trees. Permanent government offices and public buildings have arisen, spread over the wide expanse, laid apart for a future great city. Since then many noble institutions and imposing private houses are arising on all sides.

There are several handsome banks, one of which, the Bank of Egypt, I engrave. The manager, Mr. Davidson, showed me much kindness; many illustrations were supplied by him, and he has been my correspondent since. The National Bank has also a fine banking establishment, and as it is the Land Bank of the Government, it will be a useful institution for the natives.

Much has been done to level and lay out the streets of Khartoum, but it is as yet only the shell of a city. But the plan lends itself to gradual development, and trees are growing up along the main streets. There are Clubs for Officers and also similar institutions for non-coms. At the Sudan Club I was frequently a guest. It is an excellent house and has a lovely garden

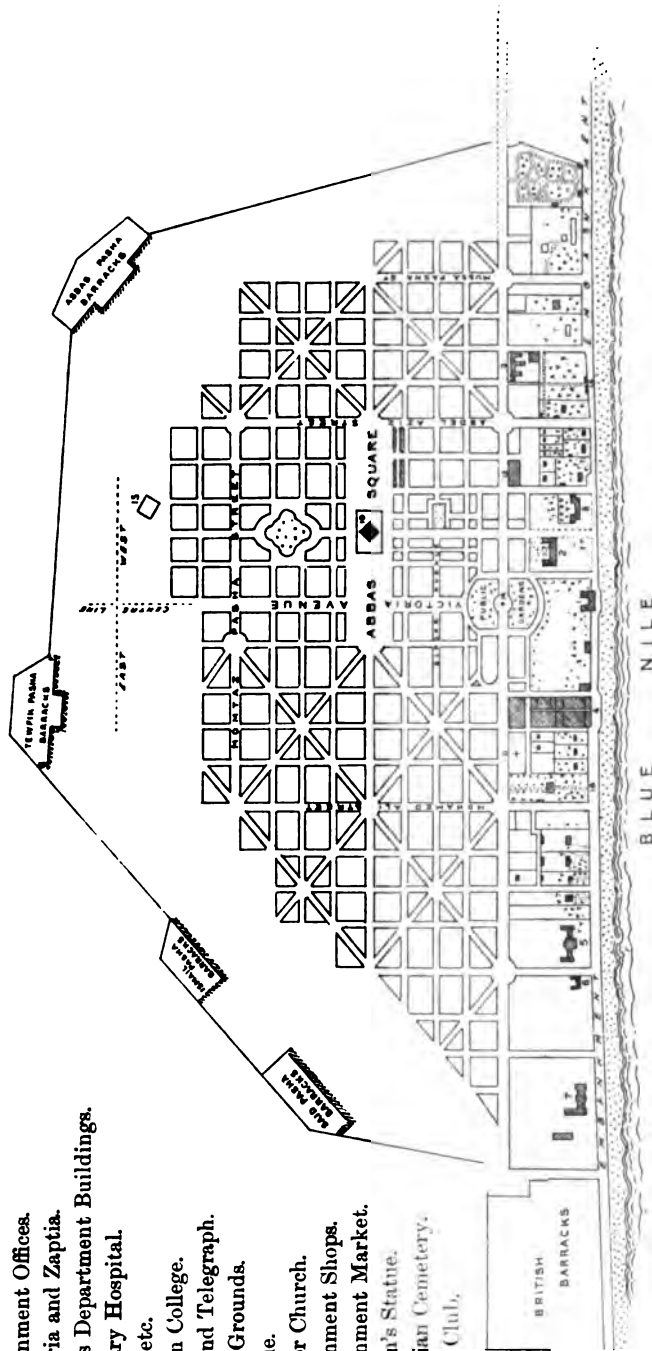


SUDANESE NATIVES, PRINCIPALLY JAALIN.

Lord W. Cecil.

PLAN OF THE CITY OF KHARTOUM AS DESIGNED BY LORD KITCHENER, 1898.

1. The Palace.
2. Government Offices.
3. Mudiria and Zaptia.
4. Works Department Buildings.
5. Military Hospital.
6. Nuzl, etc.
7. Gordon College.
8. Post and Telegraph.
9. Hotel Grounds.
10. Mosque.
11. Site for Church.
12. Government Shops.
13. Government Market.
14. Gordon's Statue.
15. Christian Cemetery.
16. Sudan Club.



PLAN OF KHARTOUM, REDUCED FROM THE GOVERNMENT SURVEY, 1904.

The frontage along the river is two miles.



CORRIDOR IN THE GORDON COLLEGE. *Rev. Llewellyn Gwynne.*

of several acres of fine palms.

There is a good hotel in Khartoum, and shops, mostly kept by Greek merchants. The Dervishes left us an inheritance in thousands of their "widows," who are all employed in the city as gardeners, navvies, and street-sweepers, happy on two or three piastres a day, quiet, industrious, patient workers all.

The Gordon College was one of Lord Kitchener's original schemes for erecting a permanent endowed building, to point to the great idea of elevating the natives of the Sudan by means of education. When he paid a hurried visit to London to receive the thanks of the nation and his title, he asked for and obtained from the British public, £100,000 for endowment of the Gordon College.

The College is completed, and in the first instance will principally be a great technical school, where every handicraft necessary to elevate the people's industry for the arts of peace will be taught. A description of its present working arrangements will be found further on.

Lord Kitchener was called away for a short time, from his work at Khartoum. This was on the 10th September, 1898, when he had to go to Fashoda to settle the *affaire* Marchand. We will speak of this incident later. He was not left long to complete his work in the Sudan; the troubles in South Africa



BODYGUARD WITH ROYAL STANDARD AND EGYPTIAN FLAG.

Lord William Cecil



LADY WINGATE AND GROUP AT PALACE, KHARTOUM.



THE LAMB IN THE PALACE GARDENS, KHARTOUM.



LADY WINGATE TAKING A SNAPSHOT : PALACE VERANDAH.



KHARTOUM : THE PALACE GARDEN.

needed his vigorous measures. In his enforced absence an able successor in the rebuilding and re-establishment of a model capital, was found in Sir Reginald Wingate, who became Sirdar and Governor-General of the Sudan.

There was to be no rest for the great soldier, and Lord Kitchener, having won his country's battles in South Africa, was hurried off to assume command in India. On his way he paid a brief visit to Khartoum, the wonderful city he had planned as the crowning monument of the regeneration of the Sudan. He expressed much



GORDON.

Statue by Hamo Thornycroft, R.A.
Trafalgar Square, London.

pleasure and satisfaction at the development of the work in his enforced absence, and signalized his visit by inaugurating the statue of Gordon, in the principal square of the new city, called by the hero's name. This is a fine statue, almost the last work of the late Onslow Ford, R.A., and forms the frontispiece to this volume. The hero is represented on his camel with all its native trappings correctly shown, just as he was wont to start on his expeditions through the country. It was related in the *Times* recently how one day a poor old black woman, who had been a pensioner of Gordon's days, came back to Khartoum, and seeing the statue exclaimed, "God be praised, the Pasha Gordon has come again!" Here she had seated herself for an entire day—and she related how she had sat long by his camel, and that still he would not look at her—he who had never passed her without a kindly nod before. "Is he tired, or what is it?" she said; but after many visits she came home glad at last, for the Pasha had nodded his head to her!

The statue of Gordon by Hamo Thornycroft, R.A. (in Trafalgar Square, London), is generally esteemed as excellent. The artist kindly gave me a photograph of this fine work, which is here reproduced as the best portrait of the hero. The attitude is said to be a wonderfully correct realisation.

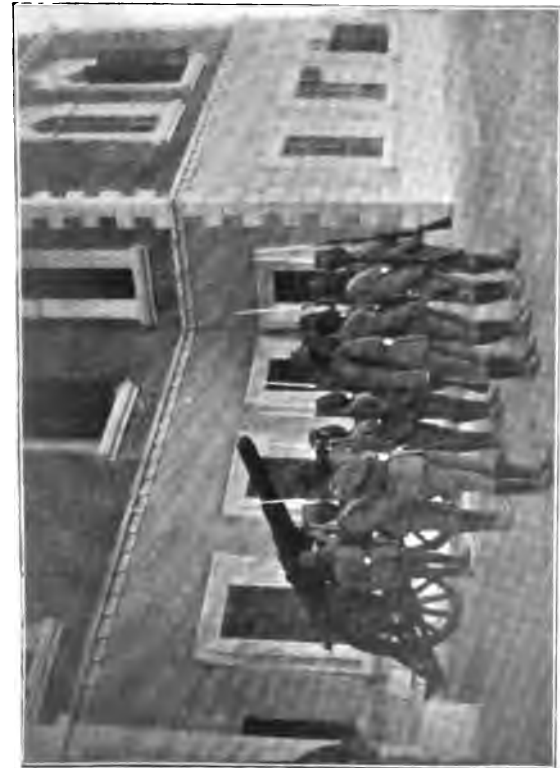
The Sirdar's chaplain, the Rev. Llewellyn Gwynne, is a great favourite with all, from the Sirdar to the poorest inhabitant. He has learned nearly all the native languages, and teaches in the evenings numbers of young fellows who are busy all day. He is foremost in every good work and yet he is most popular as an athlete with the army, for he is an expert in all games. Mr. Gwynne was my constant companion whenever he could spare time from his duties, and many of my photographs were taken with his assistance.



THE PALACE, KHARTOUM : SOUTH ASPECT.



GROUP AT THE PALACE, KHARTOUM : LORD CROMER IN CENTRE.
Zubeir Pasha's tall figure is seen on the right.



GUARD PRESENTING ARMS OUTSIDE PALACE, KHARTOUM.



VESTIBULE OF PALACE, KHARTOUM, WHERE GORDON'S MURDER TOOK PLACE.



BALÆNICÆPS REX.

Mr. Gwynne's chaplaincy at Khartoum came about under peculiar circumstances. After Lord Kitchener's conquest, the young clergyman arrived at Khartoum, a missionary from a London Society, to do what he could for the heathen of Central Africa. Kitchener was unwilling to admit missionaries at this early stage, and told Mr. Gwynne so, when he was officially brought before him. Instead of sending him back, Lord Kitchener remarked that there were plenty of heathen among the British, and suggested that he might remain at Khartoum as their chaplain. The young man cheerfully accepted the offer and signed for a seven years' appointment. He is still there, and when the new church is built, for which Lady Wingate is collecting funds, everyone hopes that the Rev. Llewellyn Gwynne may be the first pastor. The site selected for the church is one of the best in Khartoum, and the Government

have given the land rent free for ever. At present Divine worship is conducted in a room in the Palace, where "God save the King" is sung by all standing after service: this has been done every Sunday since Gordon's Memorial Ceremony.

The Palace grounds are beautiful and well kept. I was a frequent visitor and had, as a companion, a beautiful rare bird from the Bahr el Ghazal, which had been sent as a gift to the Sirdar. He is a long-legged crane, with an enormous bill like that of a pelican, apparently of whalebone. From this and his dignified aspect he has got the fine name of *Balænicæps Rex*. But the natives, with less respect, call him "Abu Markub," the father of shoes. He is perfectly tame and very fond of company, and joins any party of visitors. One day when I was trying repeatedly to take snapshots of him he sat down, and yawned—he had enough of my photography.

In the Palace Garden I remarked a colossal carved animal, of which no one knew the origin or antiquity. But somebody said it had been Gordon's, and it was well cared for, and treated with much respect, as a memento of him. It had



TIRED OF HIS PORTRAIT BEING TAKEN.



SUDANESE CORPORAL. BODYGUARD OF GOV.-GEN., PALACE, KHARTOUM.



"BALCENICEPS REX."



A DEPUTATION FROM DINKALAND AT THE PALACE, KHARTOUM.



Davidson.

GROVE OF PALMS, KHARTOUM.



SHILLUK WARRIORS: SHAM FIGHT AT KHARTOUM.

Lord William Cecil.

got buried under the ruins when the Dervishes levelled the Government House, and so escaped destruction.

I heard all about it from Father Ohrwalder, who recollected when Gordon brought it to his garden. It came from the ruins of SOBA, an ancient Christian city on the Blue Nile.

An account of a visit to Soba will be found at the end of the chapter. A German savant had discovered the Lamb

at Soba, and described it, years before, but of this I suppose Gordon was not aware. He knew the ruins were Christian by the presence of the cross on the columns of the ruined church there, which no doubt were standing in his time, and had he not removed the Lamb to a place of safety, it would have been broken up for building-stone. Soba had been used as a quarry for supplying material for Khartoum for twenty or thirty years.

The interior of the Palace is most charming in every aspect. I enjoyed many visits to it, thanks to its hospitable hosts, Sir Reginald and Lady Wingate. The Sirdar's wonderful collection of trophies and relics of his long experience at the Intelligence Department are well worth a journey to Khartoum to see. Every day some young officer would arrive unexpectedly, bringing news from the remoter provinces, and their keen interest in their duties added much to one's pleasure. All were so young, active, full of life, hope, and thorough enjoyment of their profession. And when there was a *gymkhana*, and officers and men,



THE LAMB FROM SOBA.

The Rev. Llewellyn Gwynne.



LIEUT.-COL. STANTON, MUDIR OF KHARTOUM.

white, black, and yellow, all competed together in equality in splendid efforts of field sports and military exercises, it was easy to tell how the Egyptians and Sudanese had become such well disciplined and effective soldiers.

Egypt and our Sudan are fortunate in the British officers who are selected for their government. Those I met as Lady Wingate's guests were specimens of the best of England's young soldiers, and deeply interested in their work.

The Mudir (Governor) of Khartoum, Colonel Stanton, often acted as my guide, and made my visit to Khartoum one of the most delightful experiences. He has helped me in all my literary and antiquarian efforts for the Sudan, and I have learned much by his assistance.

Many of my best photographs and the description of the antiquities in these regions are due to his unceasing kindness.

I owe to the Hon. Cuthbert James, whom I met first at Khartoum, much knowledge about the Sudan, and many of the most interesting photographs were selected for me, localized and labelled by his ready wit. He was in much of the early work in the campaign on the White Nile, but has since been mainly engaged on the financial administration of the country. His intimate knowledge of all Sudanese matters has been of the greatest service to me.

Another friend, Captain H. F. S. Amery, whose acquaintance I made at Khartoum, has given me, then and since, so much help that it would be base ingratitude to omit my hearty thanks, which I gladly place on record.

He is now the acting Chief of Intelligence, and has liberally supplied me with information on every mysterious region and answered every question. His knowledge of everything connected with the Sudan is extraordinary, and



CAPT. THE HON. CUTHBERT JAMES.
Assistant Financial Secretary, 1904.



THE ZOOLOGICAL GARDENS, KHARTOUM.

Davidson.

without his help my book would have been full of errors.

Mr. A. L. Butler, who looks after the preservation of game in the Sudan, takes a great interest in the Zoological Gardens at Khartoum.

Practical science has been greatly benefited by the researches of Dr. Balfour, who is connected with the Scientific Staff of the Sudan Government. The bites of certain mosquitoes have been blamed for causing the malarial fever which at certain seasons is very prevalent in the Sudan. Dr. Balfour

has proved that those insects at Khartoum are certainly the fever-producing variety, and has followed up his discovery by extirpating them as far as possible. This has been done by a careful search for all the old wells in which they bred, increased and multiplied to an enormous degree. These wells have been all treated with crude petroleum, and closed up; the mosquitoes having been thus abolished, malarial fever has disappeared from Khartoum.

A Museum of Antiquities for the Sudan is in course of formation at Khartoum. There are, however, no ancient buildings in or near the place, and only one archaeological emblem of old-time civilization.

The population is increasing rapidly, and churches of every Christian denomination are springing up. A handsome Mosque is being erected, on ground given by the Government.

Old Khartoum had 60,000 inhabitants, it now has 8,000 within the old walls, but the neighbourhood has 20,000 and is rapidly increasing. At first it was supposed that it would entirely replace Omdurman as a seat of trade, but it is evident that much of the commerce will remain in its old quarters, and it is never wise to remove an ancient market. There is room for both towns, but Khartoum of course is paramount as the capital of the Sudan.

The aboriginal tribes are being well cared for and gradually taught the dignity of labour, while their own native tribal divisions are respected, each tribe being quartered separately



THE MOSQUE, KHARTOUM.

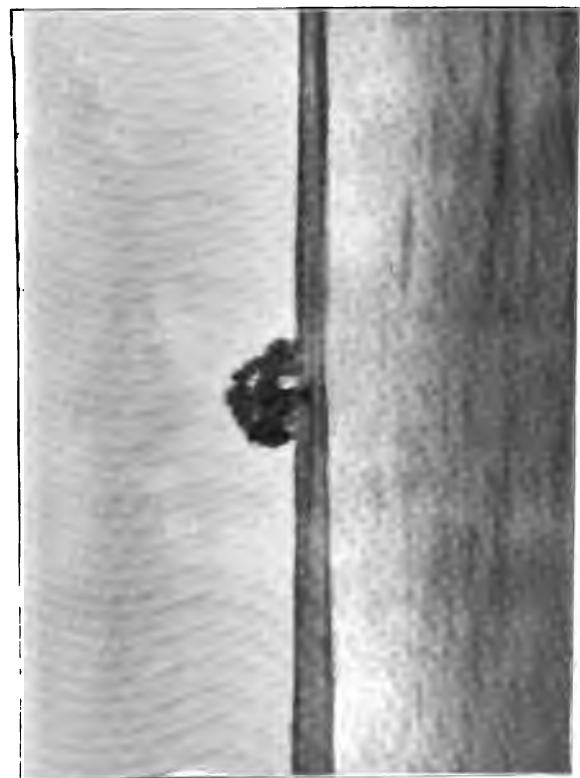
Lt.-Col. Penton.



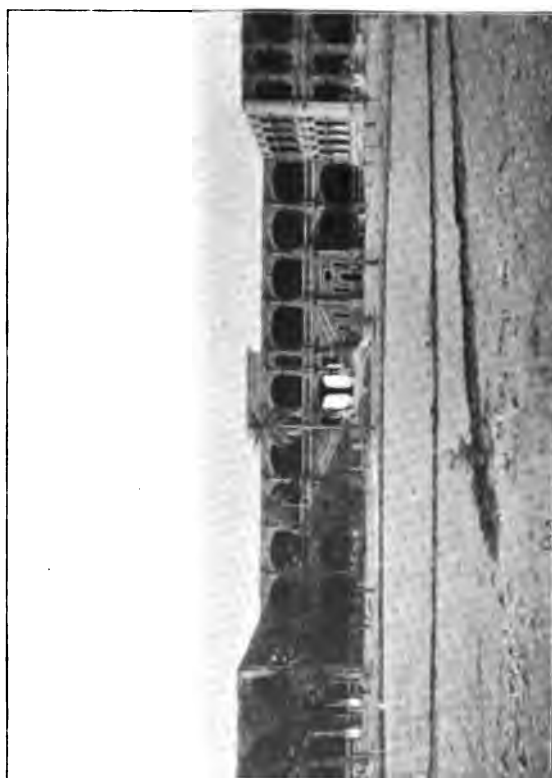
RAILWAY STATION, HALFAYA. KHARTOUM NORTH.



STEAMER WITH BARGES ALONGSIDE. BLUE NILE.



"GORDON'S TREE," 4 MILES SOUTH OF KHARTOUM.
The Dervish army crossed here on the eve of the attack on Khartoum.



THE WAR OFFICE, KHARTOUM.
Davidson.



FAIR AT THE NATIVE QUARTERS.
Empty bottles are the medium of exchange.

Davidson.

in model villages outside the city which are policed, by themselves, and controlled by their own headmen. In this way the Baggara, Shilluks, Dinkas, Jaalin, Nuers, Berbers and other tribes are taught to dwell in unity and yet not compelled to give up their primitive system of life—each tribe being allowed to build their dwellings in

their own fashion. Some have huts of reeds, others of brick or earth, some even are burrowed in the ground. Every style of simple savage life can be studied—a visit to their dozen of settlements is a most interesting experience, and the dignity with which they receive visitors is pleasant to witness.

All seem happy and contented; all able to work get employment in Khartoum, returning at night to their primitive homesteads.

The railway from the north terminates at Halfaya, opposite Khartoum, with which it is connected by a steam ferry.

Khartoum, with the towns of Halfaya and Omdurman, are united in one district; the three towns and their environs forming one Mudiria, controlled from Khartoum.

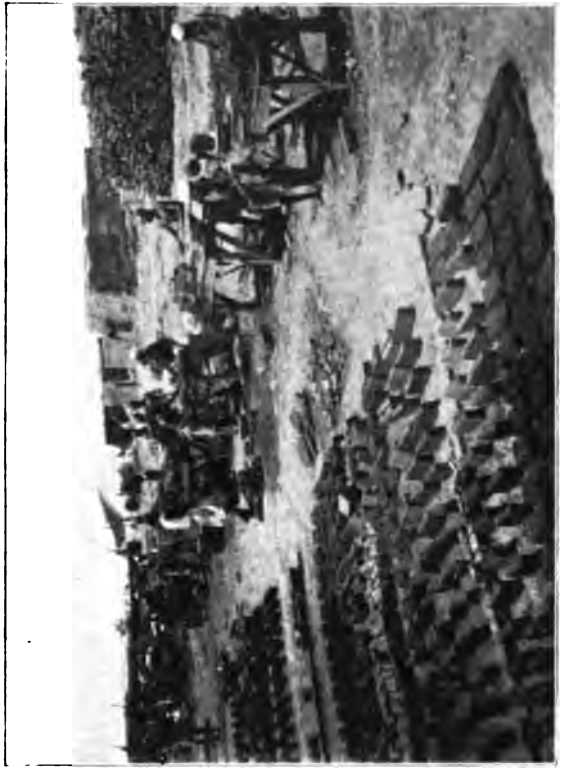


THE DARK LADIES' WEEKLY WASH, KHARTOUM.

Davidson.



SHILLUK BRAVES PREPARING FOR A WAR DANCE : THE SPEARS ARE HANDED DOWN FROM FATHER TO SON.



MAKING BRICKS, KHARTOUM.



GOVERNMENT OFFICES, KHARTOUM.



A GOOD PLACE FOR A HOT DAY : ICE FACTORY, KHARTOUM.

RECENT TIDINGS OF THE GORDON COLLEGE.

The Gordon College is now working, and I add a quotation from a recent correspondent of the *Times* to show how practical a form the instruction is taking.

"The Gordon College must always attract the interest of all Englishmen when hearing about Khartoum. The education now being given at the college is necessarily elementary only. It has not been opened three years, and nearly all pupils now in the college have been taught there everything they know except reading and writing. The pupils may now be divided into three classes :—

"1. Boys undergoing the ordinary course of primary education according to the Egyptian curriculum. The principle is being followed of educating them as far as possible in their own mother tongue before they are advanced to any foreign language.



THE GORDON COLLEGE, KHARTOUM. RIVER FRONT. *Davidson.*

"2. A class for the education of young men of the better classes, sheikh's sons, etc., who it is hoped will fill two important offices in their own country life—(1) the village schoolmaster; (2) the kadi or judge of the Mehkenesh Sharieh or Mussulman Courts.

"The advantage of enlisting the sons of the best houses of the Sudan as teachers of the children of the country must suggest

itself to every one, and it is very important that the same class should be well trained to administer the Mussulman law of the land. The Courts deal with marriage, divorce, and all questions of inheritance. The students selected for this branch of the public service will spend several years under instruction in the office of the legal secretary (whether in the Gordon College or not I do not know) after completing their actual college course. The progress that these young men have made is very remarkable. They are the very class which it was thought to be most difficult to attract to any school or college; but there are 60 of them attending classes now. Well dressed, clean, and, bearing themselves like Arab gentlemen, they are a credit to themselves and to the college.

"3. Owing to the munificence of a visitor to Khartoum full equipment for a technical school has been provided and technical education has begun. The pupils are mostly boys

from 14 years of age and onwards. They can all read and write and know some figures. The Sudani, both Arab and black, is seen best as a mechanic. He takes to the workshop like a young duck to the water, and there will be an ample field in the country for the employment of skilled mechanics.

"In addition to these three courses of education there is at the college a chemical laboratory, a mechanical workshop, the gift of generous friends, and a museum."

I happened to meet the donors of several outfits for the College when I was at Khartoum. They were Sir William Mather, who gave the mechanical appliances, and Mr. Wellcome, who gave the chemical laboratory.

In addition to the Khartoum Public Schools, where I have heard that only Arabic is taught, I am happy to say that the American Mission Schools, which have done so much for Egypt, have had a central establishment in Khartoum since 1900. They have branches in Omdurman, Halfaya, Wadi Halfa and Wad Medani (on the Blue Nile), Kassala and on the Sobat, away in the Land of the Sudd. I have seen the good these people do in Egypt, and they will be a blessing to the Sudan. They teach all comers and educate male and female teachers from among the natives, and make their schools almost self-supporting. The knowledge of the English language, with the practice of the Christian virtues, that these schools have spread over Egypt, is a thing to be hoped for among the neglected natives of the Sudan. Lord Cromer's opinion of the work of these schools will be found in Chapter XII.

It is related of the state of the country when Kitchener conquered it, as showing to what depths of barbarism the Dervishes had reduced the people, they had lost the art of making bricks and laying them, there were no tradesmen, no carpenters. Italians had to be employed to teach them the simplest skilled labour. Already this state of affairs is reversed, industry is in the ascendancy and local skilled labour has become plentiful.

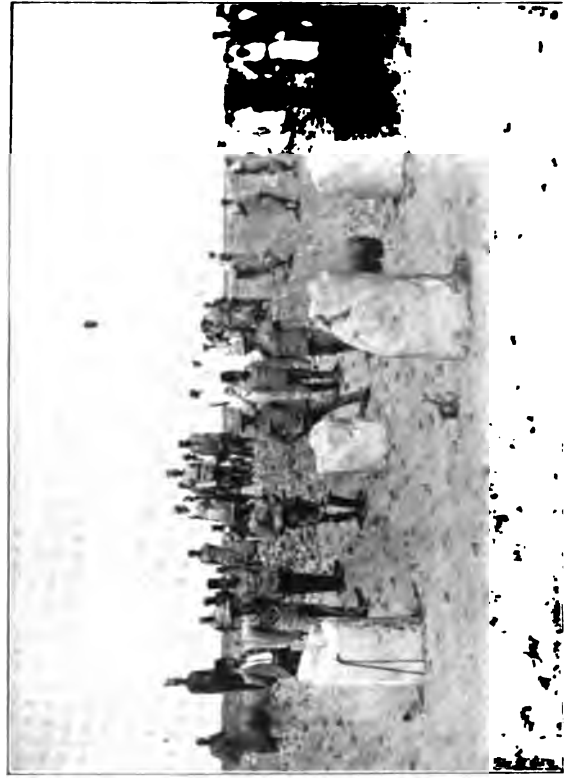


THE NATIVE JEWELLER HAS RETURNED.

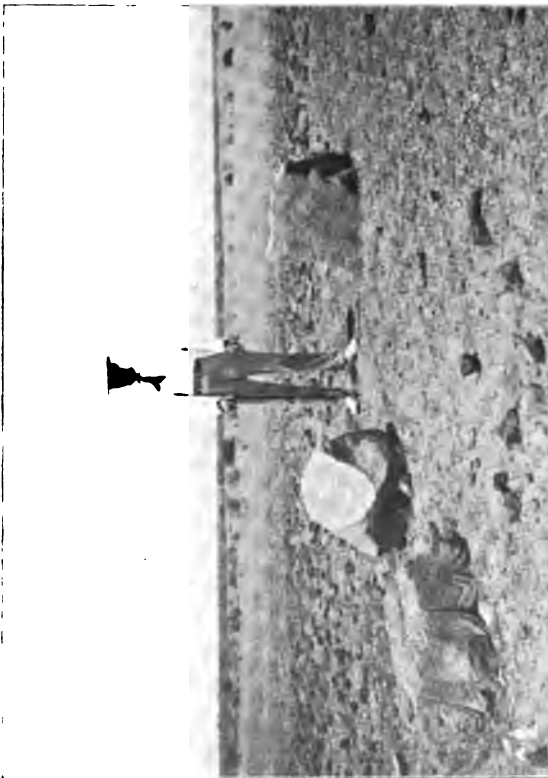
I have several excellent specimens of his work, which Remzi Bey got him to make for me.



RUINS OF SOBA, BLUE NILE.



A VISIT TO THE RUINS OF THE CHRISTIAN CHURCH.



SOBA : RUINS OF CHRISTIAN CHURCH.



SOBA : CAPITAL OF A COLUMN, ANCIENT CHRISTIAN CHURCH.

EXCURSION TO SOBA.

As Soba is so near to Khartoum, we will describe it as a development of our visit to Gordon's city. The Government have recently erected a Rest-house for visitors there, and it deserves to be spelt with a capital "R." It is a good beginning, and is the first provision of its kind provided for tourists in the Sudan. We may thank Colonel Stanton for this thoughtfulness, which has been so well carried out.

On the east bank of the Blue Nile, about thirteen miles from Khartoum, are, or rather were, the ruins of a great city. Duemichen, the German savant and traveller, thus describes the discovery of the place, by him, in 1863. In giving an illustration of the great stone animal (now preserved in the Palace Garden at Khartoum) with the inscription, he says—"This sheep, with the foundations of a Christian Basilica, and several well preserved capitals, with the cross upon them, was brought to light by me during excavations undertaken in 1863, not far from Soba (the Asta Sobas of Strabo, who wrote about 30 B.C.). This animal is ornamented with Ethiopian hieroglyphics,



REST-HOUSE AT SOBA.

and represents the most southern discovery of such language. The inscription proves that the city of Soba was within the borders of the ancient Ethiopian Empire of Meroë."

"It proves that on the spot, where afterwards rose the capital of the old Christian Empire, called by the Arab geographies 'Alua,' there must have been formerly an old Ethiopian city, which, to judge by the name of the river transmitted to us, viz., 'Asta-Sobas' (the river of Sobas) had the same name which has been preserved till the present day in that of the village of Soba near the ruins. The site of the capital of this district, which can be no other than the ancient province of Alua, is thus proved. The native name of the Blue Nile is Azrek, which thus still retains part of the classical name."

This sheep was subsequently brought to Khartoum by Gordon probably because it was found in the ruins of a Christian Church.

The stone and thousands of boat-loads of burnt bricks had been carried off to be used in the building of the then new town of Khartoum. This had gone on for forty years before Gordon's time and was still in progress. The sands had blown over the foundations of the ancient city and it was completely forgotten. When visiting Khartoum I was much struck with the ancient stone animal, which I came upon unexpectedly in a corner of the great garden attached to the Palace. The gravel of the path was piled up against the base. Thinking that it might bear an inscription, I carefully raked the gravel back, and discovered the inscription which I copied. Nobody in Khartoum in present times had noticed the



INSCRIPTION ON BASE OF THE LAMB AT KHARTOUM, NORTH SIDE.



FRAGMENT ON BASE, SOUTH SIDE.



ON BASE, EAST END.

stone sheep, and none had dreamt of an inscription being on it. The only "oldest inhabitant" in the neighbourhood was Father Ohrwalder, and to him I applied. When I visited him at his house at Omdurman we had a long conversation about this monument. He knew all about the beast, and told me how Gordon had saved it from destruction, as a Christian relic. But, strange to say, Ohrwalder had never noticed the inscription. After I returned to England, I accidentally came upon the record of Duemichen's discovery and his clever translation of the inscription which neither Professors Petrie or Sayce, Llewellyn Griffith or Dr. Herbert Walker could read. Duemichen had easily read the word "Alua" and so drew his own conclusions.

Recently Colonel Stanton, Mudir of Khartoum, accompanied by the British chaplain, the Rev. Llewellyn Gwynne, visited the place. They describe the whole plain as covered with old foundations, and remains of burnt brick, tiles and fragments



SOBA: RUINS OF THE CHRISTIAN CHURCH.

of stone. Four granite columns protrude out of the sand, and mark all that remains of Duemichen's "Basilica of Christian times." Capitals with crosses on each side lie strewn about. Excavation by Lieutenant-Colonel Stanton and the Rev. Llewellyn Gwynne brought to light one particularly fine sculptured capital, possibly one of those seen by Duemichen forty years ago, and perhaps buried again by him for the sake of security.

They came also, within the enclosure of the church, upon several graves containing skeletons, which they reverently covered up again. The city had evidently been of great extent. There is a tradition of another ruined city on the opposite side of the Blue Nile, and that a great bridge of brick in former days crossed the river near this. The "Bridge of Brick" legend is curious, as it may have been a dam to regulate the storage or supply of water for irrigation purposes when the river falls to its lower summer level. This might have been just a similar "Regulator" to that which Mr. Dupuis will shortly be building, either here or further up the Blue Nile.

Father Ohrwalder told me of the tradition of the Great Christian Empire of Soba which is, he has no doubt, the Sheba of the Bible, and the name by which the place is known to this day. Colonel Stanton and the Rev. Llewellyn Gwynne related that the natives tell of ruins still existing of many other cities in this region and of others on the west towards Darfur. An aged sheikh told Mr. Gwynne that his grandfathers (ancestors) were all Christian, but were forced to accept Islam by the conquerors. He said, "You will now want to make us become Christian again, it is only natural." But Mr. Gwynne said we only wished to leave all to follow their own religion as long as they were satisfied of its truth. Another native gentleman took a different view of Christianity. He is a fine looking man and knew Gordon. I was introduced to him and liked him much. This man came to Mr. Gwynne and asked him to admit him and his family into his church. Mr. Gwynne said he could not, as he was Government Chaplain, and there was a regulation against his doing so. The man went away sorrowful, for he had three daughters and he wanted them to be Christians because, he said, a woman had no life she could call her own under Islam. Of course by-and-by when there is a public church he and his family may become Christian if they so desire.



Joseph Ohrwalder

Omdurman —

KITCHENER'S SCHOOL.

Being a translation of the song that was made by a Mohammedan schoolmaster of Bengal Infantry (some time on service at Suakin) when he heard that Kitchener was taking money from the English to build a Madrissa for Hubshees—or a College for the Sudanese, 1898.

ON Hubshee, carry your shoes in your hand and
bow your head on your breast!
This is the message of Kitchener who did not break
you in jest.
It was permitted to him to fulfil the long-appointed
years;
Reaching the end ordained of old over your dead
Emirs.

He stamped only before your walls, and the Tomb ye
knew was dust:
He gathered up under his armpits all the swords of
your trust:
He set a guard on your granaries, securing the weak
from the strong:
He said:—‘Go work the waterwheels that were
abolished so long.’

He said:—‘Go safely, being abased. I have accom-
plished my vow.’
That was the mercy of Kitchener. Cometh his
madness now!
He does not desire as ye desire, nor devise as ye
devise:
He is preparing a second host—an army to make
you wise.

Not at the mouth of his clean-lipped guns shall ye
learn his name again,
But letter by letter, from Kaf to Kaf, at the mouth
of his chosen men.
He has gone back to his own city, not seeking
presents or bribes,
But openly asking the English for money to buy
you Hakims and scribes.

Knowing that ye are forfeit by battle and have no
right to live,
He begs for money to bring you learning—and all
the English give.
It is their treasure—it is their pleasure—thus are
their hearts inclined:
For Allah created the English mad—the maddest of
all mankind!

They do not consider the Meaning of Things; they
consult not creed nor clan.
Behold, they clap the slave on the back, and behold,
he ariseth a man!
They terribly carpet the earth with dead, and before
their cannon cool,
They walk unarmed by twos and threes to call the
living to school.

How is this reason (which is their reason) to judge
a scholar's worth,
By casting a ball at three straight sticks and de-
fending the same with a fourth?
But this they do (which is doubtless a spell) and
other matters more strange,
Until by the operation of years, the hearts of their
scholars change:

Till these make come and go great boats or engines
upon the rail
(But always the English watch near by to prop
them when they fail);
Till these make laws of their own choice and Judges
of their own blood;
And all the mad English obey the Judges and say
that the Law is good.

Certainly they were mad from of old: but I think
one new thing,
That the magic whereby they work their magic—
wherefrom their fortunes spring—
May be that they show all peoples their magic and
ask no price in return.
Wherefore, since ye are bound to that magic, O
Hubshee, make haste and learn!

Certainly also is Kitchener mad. But one sure
thing I know—
If he who broke you be minded to teach you, to his
Madrissa go!
Go, and carry your shoes in your hand and bow
your head on your breast,
For he who did not slay you in sport, he will not
teach you in jest.

RUDYARD KIPLING.

From "The Five Nations," Methuen and Co., Publishers, London.

CHAPTER X.

THE ANTIQUITIES OF "THE ISLAND OF MEROË."



TEMPLE AT NAGA.

Mr. Percy C. Lord, R.E.

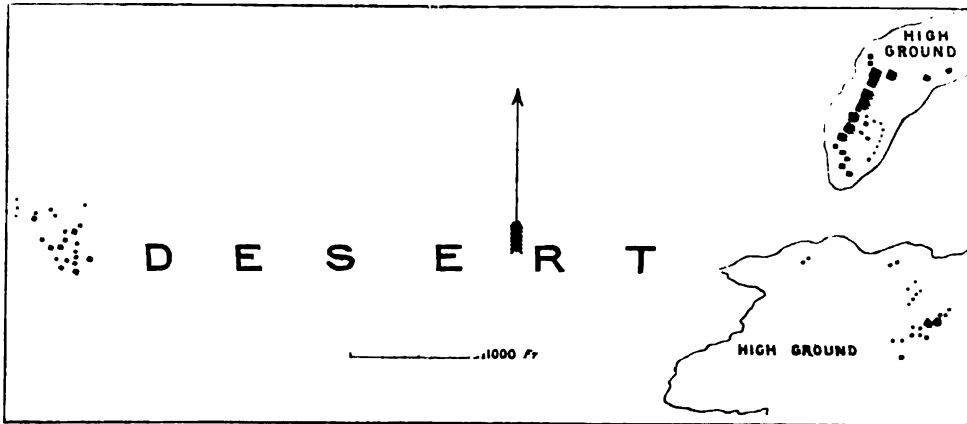
THE PYRAMIDS OF MEROË, THE JEWELLERY FOUND BY FERLINI, QUEEN KANDAKE,
THE ANTIQUITIES OF BAN NAGA, THE TEMPLES OF NAGA, TEMPLES OF MESSAURAT,
TEMPLES OF WADI EL SUFRA, ETC.



CARVED BLOCKS AT NAGA.

Mr. Percy C. Lord, R.E.

THE PYRAMIDS OF MEROË.



MEROË : MAP OF THE PYRAMID FIELD (BAKRAWIYA).

Hoskins.

THE "ISLAND OF MEROË."

STRABO, Ptolemy, and other historians and geographers, some 2,000 years ago, have called the peninsula or rather the tongue of land between the Atbara (Astoboras) and Blue Nile (Astopas) the "Island of Meroë." This region was once a rich kingdom full of cities whose remains are still to be seen. It was also a populous district and doubtless a part of the civilised kingdom whose power extended between the SECOND and FOURTH CATARACTS, communications being kept up with Napata, by the land transit across the Bayuda desert, which still exists between the present towns of Korti or Merowe and Shendi. It is necessary to mention all this again, as we have no proof that the pyramids here had any connection with those of Napata.

This region was undoubtedly rich in ancient times, but is now steeped in wretchedness; give it back agricultural possibilities and it may return to prosperity. The great edifices we are about to describe must have cost enormous sums, and there seems no other source of wealth but agriculture for deriving any return from the land, for it does not seem to possess minerals.

It is hoped that by calling the attention of the Government to this region's wealth of ancient remains, the authorities may begin to see the necessity for protecting these priceless records of a great past. For it is to be feared that if irrigation and agriculture be largely developed, and some ten or twenty thousand immigrants brought in to the now deserted wastes, the ruins will be exposed to dangers which they have hitherto escaped.

THE PYRAMIDS OF MEROË.

After crossing the Atbara and a short distance north of Shendi, the "Pyramids of Meroë" come in sight, clearly seen on the east from the railway, about two miles away. They are generally known as the Pyramids of Bakrawiya, the name of the village near

them. Travellers of the last century called them the Pyramids of Assour, or Sur, the name of another village near the vast pyramid field. At present they are best visited



MEROË, THE GREAT PYRAMID.

Caillaud.

from Shendi, where the fast trains stop. Some day some other stations will be made available, no doubt, and Rest-houses will be provided and arrangements made for parties of tourists visiting a scene almost as wonderful as Sakkara. When we get near them, we find that there are three separate groups of pyramids. The principal group is on high ground on the north, and here there are in all about thirty pyramids, large and small. Nearly all had, or have, the small temple on the eastern side (which we have seen at the similar structures in the north-western part of the ancient Kingdom of Meroë, near Napata). A valley intervenes, and south of this there are the ruins of about twenty-five more pyramids. About a mile further west, in the sandy plain, there are the remains of some twenty-four smaller pyramids. Very possibly the ruins of many others have

been buried in the drifting sand.



MEROË, SOUTHERN PYRAMIDS FROM THE NORTH-WEST.

Caillaud.

One of the pyramids in the principal group has an arched antechamber, and in this pyramid, Lepsius says, Ferlini found the celebrated treasure, which is now in the Berlin Museum.

Lepsius says he

had great difficulty in reading the Ethiopian hieroglyphs, but he made out, to his own satisfaction, the name of one of the cartouches, that of the Queen Kandake,



MEROË, THE GREAT GROUP OF PYRAMIDS FROM THE N.W.



MEROË, GENERAL VIEW OF THE PYRAMIDS FROM N.E.



MEROË, PYRAMIDS NEAREST THE NILE FROM S.E.

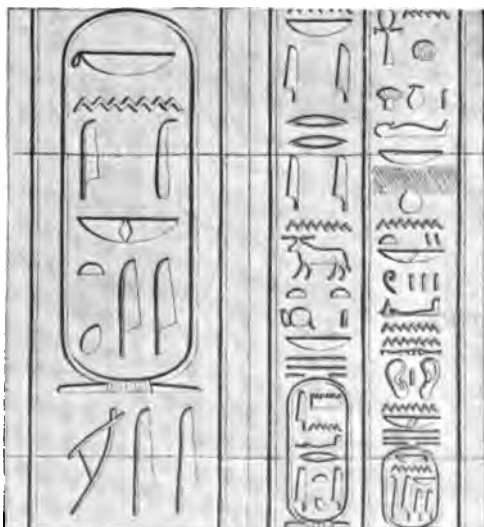
to whom the pyramid and the jewellery most probably belonged. Lepsius believed that the best buildings at that place, and here, were of her epoch. From these pyramids and temples, he tells us that he was able to discover no less than eighteen royal names, but had not time then to study their order or sequence of their reigns. Unfortunately he never had the time, and so we still remain in ignorance of this most important step towards knowledge of their history and date.

Every one of these pyramids must have contained a royal personage. Lepsius made plans of every pyramid and temple, and copied the inscriptions of many, although he could only guess at their meaning,

hoping one day to be able, by means of further research, to discover the import of many signs which the later Ethiopians had added to the Egyptian alphabet. The



ETHIOPIAN KING, FROM ONE OF THE PYRAMID TEMPLES.—(BERLIN.)



THE CARTOUCHE OF "QUEEN CANDACE." Lepsius.

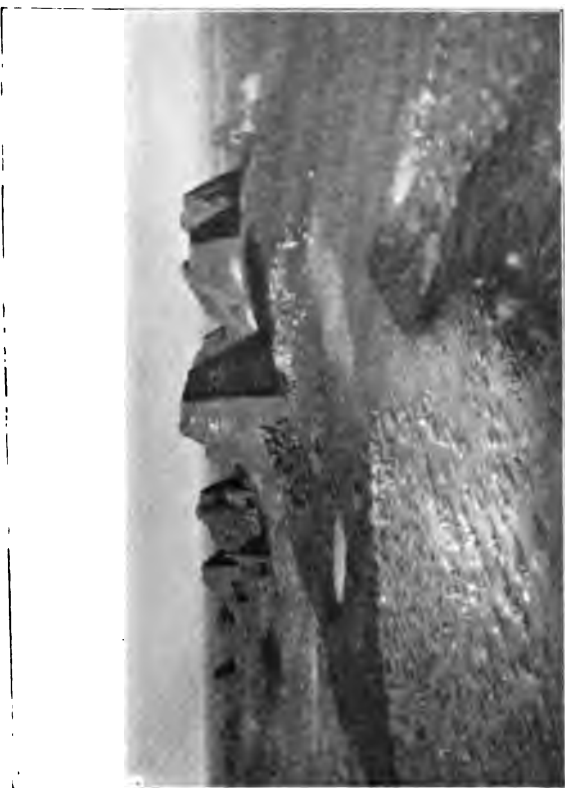
Coptic alphabet has 36 letters, and Lepsius thought these extra hieroglyphic signs might be explained by them, but no further light has been cast on them since his day, and when I applied recently to Professors Petrie, Sayce and others, they all pleaded their ignorance of this script.

I illustrate the pyramid-groups from Caillaud, showing their state in 1820, others from Hoskins in 1833, and also illustrations from Lepsius. After this visit of Hoskins the Italian traveller Ferlini came on the scene, and in his zeal for ancient treasures, it is to be feared, did much injury to several of these ancient monuments. The ruined condition of these monuments in Caillaud's time shows that the spoiler's hand had been at work

ages ago. But the news of Ferlini's find of jewellery spread all over the country, and



THE LARGEST PYRAMIDS TO THE NORTH-EAST.



PYRAMIDS NEAREST THE RUIN.



MAIN GROUP OF PYRAMIDS.



CENTRAL GROUP OF PYRAMIDS.



MEROË, THE SOUTHERN GROUP OF PYRAMIDS.

Lepsius.

when Lepsius came, armed with a firman, protected by a government convoy, and with all the prestige of a royal mission of discovery, he found everyone convinced that he came in search of gold and jewels. It is to be feared that the damage may have been done to these monuments by treasure seekers since the days of Lepsius, and therefore it is to be hoped that they may soon be placed under protection.

In the letters of Lepsius, he states that he had no doubt whatever that the Queen who owned the jewellery which we engrave, was the Kandake whose representation he

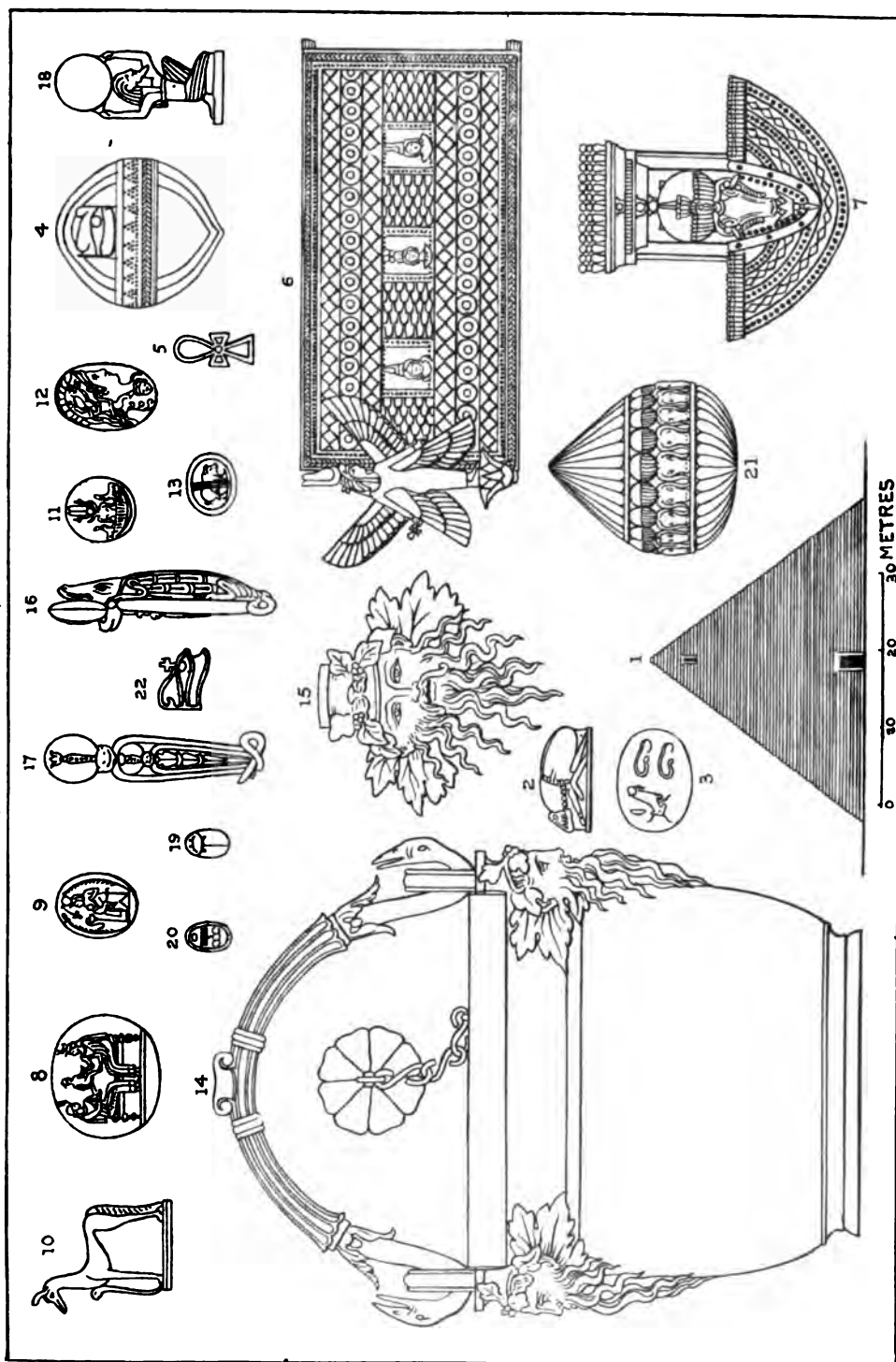


MEROË, PYRAMID WITH DECORATED TEMPLE. *Hoskins.*

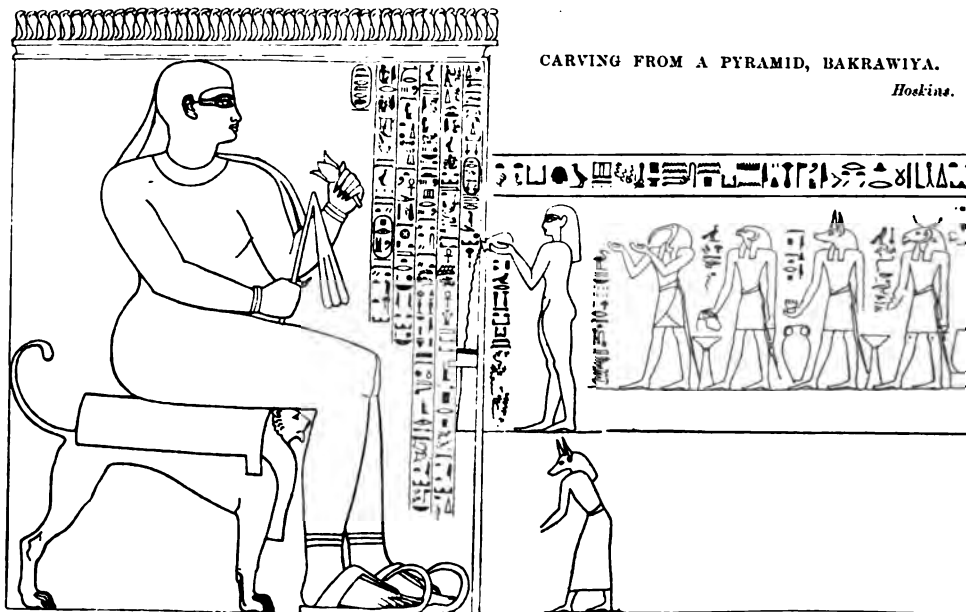
saw in the pyramid, with her nails more than an inch long. He also states that he had engaged the cawass who had been with Ferlini when he found the jewellery, and he was shown the "hole in the wall" where it came from. Lepsius does not seem to have searched for such treasures, at least not in the way Ferlini appears to have done. I found a copy of Ferlini's pamphlet in the British Museum, of which I had a translation made and presented to the authorities at Khartoum. Here is an extract from Ferlini's own account; he had pulled about several temples and pyramids before he was successful in his searches for treasure:—

"Dejected at our barren researches in the smaller pyramids I determined, as a last resort, to try for a better result in one of the larger ones standing at the top of the hill, and decided to work upon the only one that remained intact. . . . It was formed of sixty-four steps. . . . the whole height was twenty-six metres, and about forty-two metres on every side. I saw that the summit could easily be demolished as it was already beginning to fall. . . . there was soon room for other workmen. . . . We could see through the hole that was opened into the hollow space holding certain objects. It was composed of roughly-wrought stones. After the

MEROË: JEWELLERY FOUND IN A PYRAMID BY FERLINI.
COPY OF FERLINI'S PLATE, FROM HIS PAMPHLET, DESCRIBING THE JEWELLERY.



Apparently the vases were packed full of the smaller jewellery, which is now in Berlin.
The larger vessels seem to have found their way into Museums in Italy.



CARVING FROM A PYRAMID, BAKRAWIYA.

Hoskins.



SEALS, PENDANTS, AND BRACELETS FROM THE FERLINI JEWELLERY, BERLIN.

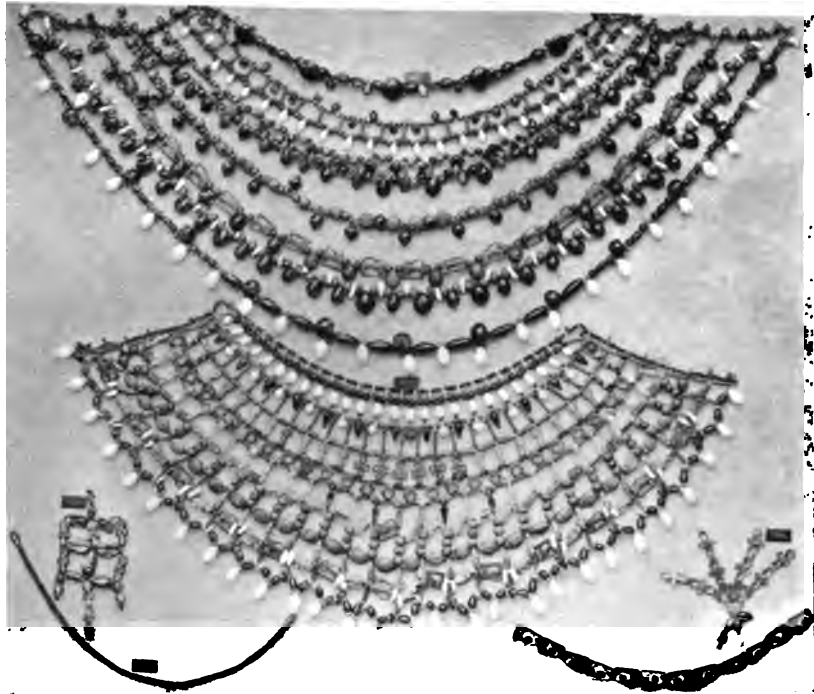


CARVINGS AT WADI EL SUFRA.

Lepsius.

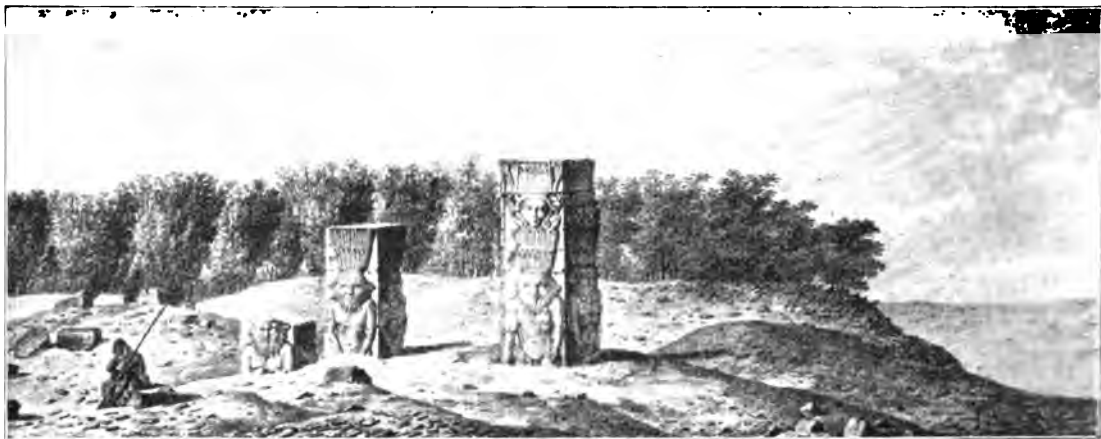
larger stones which covered the upper storey were removed, we discovered a long square space formed by the stones of the steps of the four side walls, about five feet high, and six or seven long. The first thing that met our eyes was a large body covered with white cotton cloth or byssus, which crumbled to pieces at the first touch, and underneath this a bier or litter of wood, quadrilateral, supported on four smooth cylindrical legs, its balustrade formed of a number of pieces of wood placed alternately, a large and a small, and representing symbolical figures—lotus flower, uraeus, etc., etc. Under this bier was found the vases which contained the precious objects wrapped in woven-cloth. There were four vases and a semicircular cup—these were all made of a kind of bronze. . . . In the centre of the pyramid was a niche formed by three stones. When these were removed I saw some objects wrapped in cloth. These proved to be two bronze vases, perfect, of elegant shape and workmanship. . . .”

Some years afterwards, Ferlini offered the treasure to the British Museum. *It was declined as being spurious.* Lepsius happened to be in London at the time, and carried off Ferlini and the jewellery to Berlin, where it was at once purchased by the King of Prussia, and is now the chief treasure of the Berlin Museum, more than 500 objects filling several cases, and other objects are preserved in Turin. They exhibit a most remarkable variety, and seem to show a gradual transition from



JEWELLERY FROM MEROË NOW IN BERLIN MUSEUM.

Egyptian art to classic styles, and thus give a very correct idea of the date of the tomb which Lepsius thought may be just before the Christian era. But some of the objects may have been much more ancient. The objects appear to be of many different dates. Whether they were hidden in the time of trouble (perhaps when the Roman army entered the country) or buried at Queen Kandake's decease, we cannot tell, though proper scientific examination might even yet discover. Strange to say, neither Lepsius or other travellers have ever told us if the bodies entombed here were mummified or not. Nor have there been any searches, as far as I know, for shafts or tomb



RUINS AT BAN NAGA (SEE PAGE 161).

Cailland.

chambers underneath these pyramids, such as have always been found in pyramids in Northern Egypt. Ferlini's account, if to be relied on, would lead us to suppose that the tomb chamber was above ground and that the corpse fell to dust on being exposed to the air, but his account is not clear, and he, at best, was evidently a sordid treasure seeker, and by no means a scientific discoverer like Lepsius.

Whatever their period, those who built these pyramids had an evident connection with the builders of those of Napata and its neighbourhood. The angle of the slope, the small eastern chapels and temples are almost the same. On the other hand, we find no large temples here such as we shall see at Naga. But the great Pyramid here has, upon the pylons of the little temple, sculptures of a "stout queen," who may be the same person who is represented on one of the larger temples at Naga as they are exactly the same style. These resemblances would seem to prove that all three regions, so widely apart, Napata, Bakrawiya, and Naga are all, part and parcel, the work of the same race of men, if not actually of contemporary date. But if it was all one homogeneous kingdom, where are we to find the remains of its metropolis?

There is no evidence of any great city having existed here. Hoskins speaks of a space between the river and the pyramids strewed with burnt brick and fragments of walls; these would only indicate a small town, but we would expect greater evidence of the capital of a kingdom. Where the metropolis of Meroë was, is still a mystery. This great pyramid-field was only a royal necropolis. When the archaeological survey of the Sudan reveals the mysteries of this region the site may be discovered; at present it seems to have been only a vast cemetery, such as Sakkara or Gizeh in Egypt.

Lepsius tells of his discovery of three extensive cemeteries north of the Meroë pyramids. The tombs at a distance seemed to be pyramids, but were only round heaps of desert stones. One had 56 grave mounds, another 21, and another 40. There was a large one often in the centre, and some had a circumvallation of four-cornered shape.



NAGA, VIEW OF THE GREAT EASTERN TEMPLE TAKEN FROM S.W.



NAGA, VIEW OF THE WESTERN TEMPLE AND THE PYLONS FROM E.

He had not time to excavate so as to ascertain the period of their erection. There were upwards of 200 tombs in all.

Seeing what wonderful MSS. have been found in the Fayum by Messrs. Grenfell and Hunt, working for the Egypt Exploration Fund, it seems worth while to draw scientific attention to the many unexplored tombs in this region, and also the rock tombs contiguous to the cities of Naga and its neighbourhood.

Lord Cromer alluded to the translations of these Greek MSS. in his First Report of 1904, as being most useful to him in making comparisons of the government of Egypt in ancient and modern times. Here in "Our Sudan" there are tombs and pyramids of the Greek and Latin periods, as found in the Fayum; search should be made in this region for similar proofs of history. When the king-priests of Amon migrated to the south, they doubtless carried with them many ancient papyri, which may now be found in their tombs or pyramids here. No documents were found or expected by Lepsius, as this was before the Fayum discoveries, and nobody thought that such things existed among the neglected cemeteries and rubbish heaps of vanished cities.

BAN NAGA.

About 50 miles south of these pyramids (29 miles south of Shendi) we come to Wadi Ban Naga, which seems to have been, as its name implies, an offshoot of the city of Naga, but much nearer the Nile. The ruins of Naga are about 35 miles from the river, away in what is now almost all desert, but was once fertile land, at least for a considerable part of the year. Here there are many remarkable temples and other buildings, but no pyramids. Remains of other cities are found at Messaurat and Wadi el Sufra in the desert north of Naga, but there are no pyramids at either place, as far as is known. So the pyramids of Bak-raviya may have been the burial place of the royal families of these ancient cities, as Sakkara was for Memphis. These three groups of ruins are near enough to have been visited by Lepsius, on one occasion, all in two days.

The ruins at Ban Naga are now most easily approached, by railway



ALTAR FROM BAN NAGA—BERLIN.



NAGA : GATE OF TEMPLE IN EGYPTO-CLASSIC STYLE.



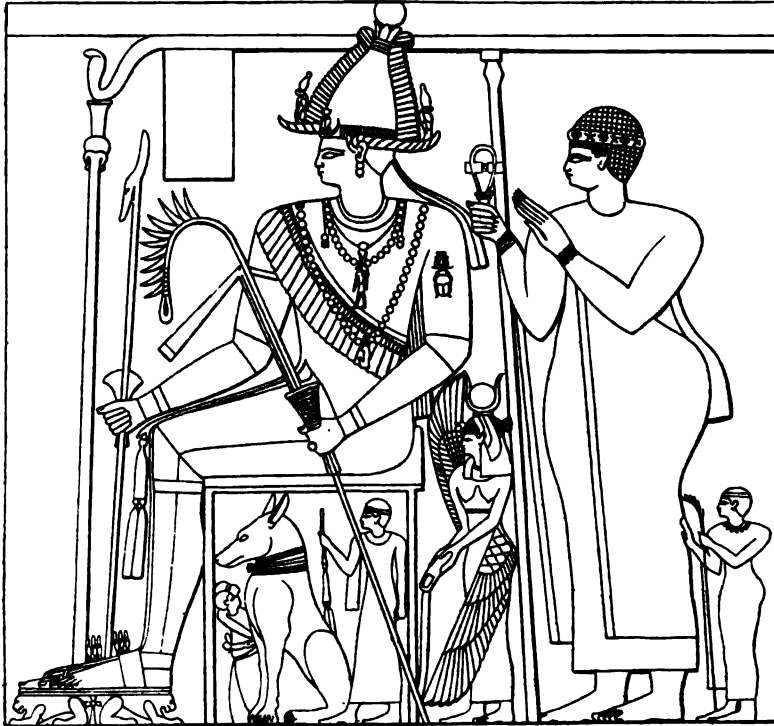
NAGA : LIONS IN CLASSIC STYLE. INTERIOR OF GATE.



NAGA : AVENUE OF LAMBS.



NAGA : TEMPLE AND COLUMN WITH CARVING.



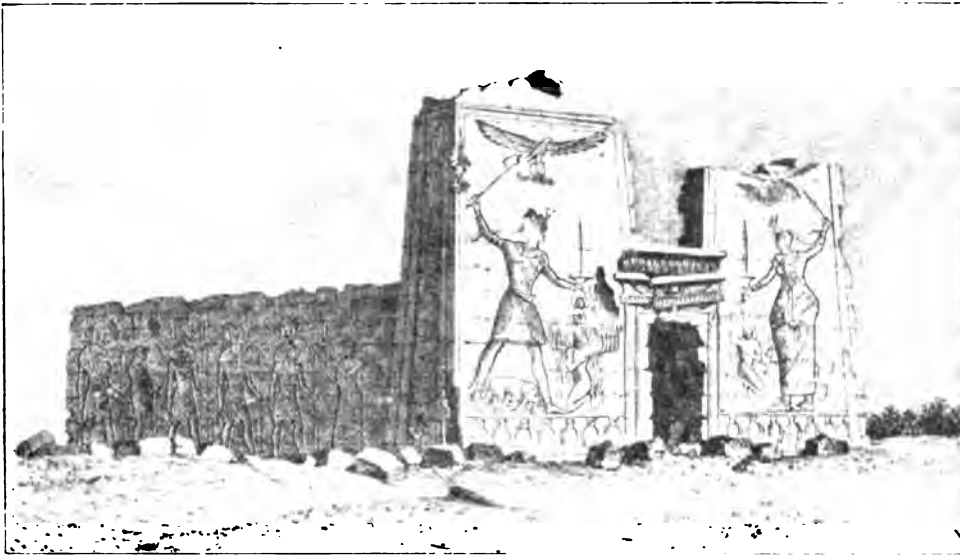
MEROË (BAKRAWIYA).
SCULPTURE FROM ONE
OF THE PYRAMIDS.—
(*From Lepsius,*
"Denkmaler.")

Observe the length
of the Queen's nails.
This was to show that
she had never done any
work. The same custom
still obtains in many
parts of Africa.



NAGA.
SCULPTURE ON THE
LARGER TEMPLE,
WEST WALL.—
(*From Lepsius,*
"Denkmaler.")

It is notable that
the decorations on the
Queen's robe are un-
doubtedly the cross,
but whether a more
ancient symbol or the
Christian emblem it is
impossible to say.



NAGA—THE WESTERN TEMPLE FROM S.E.

Caillaud.

travellers, from Shendi. Lepsius visited Ban Naga before reaching the more important ruins of Naga. At Ban Naga all the ruins visible were two little temples, one having pillars with Typhon and Horus heads, rather rudely sculptured (page 156), the other had round columns covered with writing much worn away. Lepsius excavated here, and found three altars on which were royal cartouches similar to those



NAGA—GREAT TEMPLE FROM THE WEST.

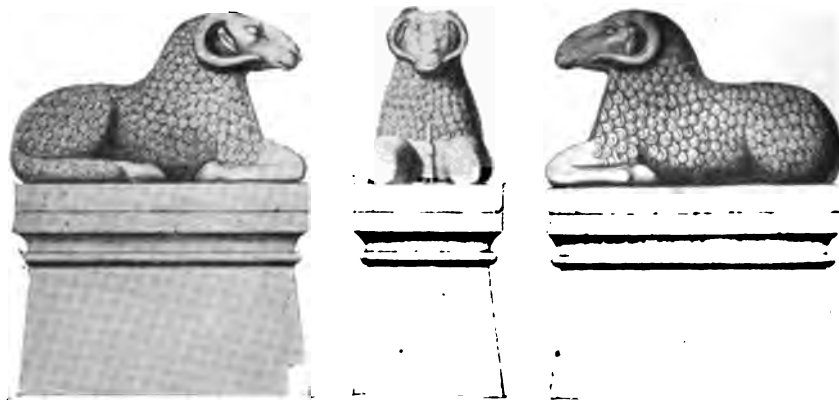
Caillaud.

royal names which he afterwards found at Naga. "They were in very hard sandstone, and with saws, hammers and axe he cut the largest one into many pieces to make it portable, and took it and other relics to Berlin." It weighed 50 cwt., has been well joined, and is now a very notable object in the Museum. He tells us that "they were found in their

places, carefully let into a smooth pavement formed of square slabs of stone with hard plaster poured over them. On the west side of this altar the King, on the east the Queen, are represented, with their names: on the other side two goddesses. There is also engraved on the north side the hieroglyphic of the North; and on the south side that of the South. The other altars" (which should be found there still, possibly now buried under the sand) "bore similar representations." Ban Naga has a fine group of palm trees near it, and must have been in its day the centre of a rich and fertile district. Further excavation and investigation may yet discover much in this locality.

NAGA.

NAGA lies 23 miles to the south-east of Ban Naga, and was evidently a much more important place. There are three important ruins of temples of late Egyptian style. These are covered in many parts with inscriptions. Two most to the south were built by the same king. On both temples the king is represented accompanied by his queen.



"SHEEP" FROM NAGA.

Lepsius.

There is behind them the figure of another royal personage who bears different names on the two temples. The cartouche here is a copy of that of the ancient king USERTESSEN I. (Sen-wosret) of the XIIth Dynasty. The Ethiopian monarch had adopted the royal name of an Egyptian king some 2,500 years earlier. A similar thing was done in modern names at a smaller distance of time by European sovereigns. It was not done to deceive—but it did deceive Caillaud and others. Lepsius, of course, knew better. These cartouches resemble in style those at Meroë (Bakrawiya), but are of different names, and in two other cases imitations of ancient Egyptian royal names, which must not deceive future travellers. There is a third temple to the north, much ruined, which has the cartouche of another king on the door lintels, in quite a different style from all the others.

But the chief object of interest here, is an exquisite little temple in the classic style, quite a gem. (See page 145.) It bears no inscription, but as it is

TEMPLE OF ROMAN-EGYPTIAN STYLE—MESSAURAT.

partially buried in the sand, scientific excavation may discover its origin by careful search for a foundation deposit under the door sill, or at the corners as is so often found in Egyptian temples. We are told that the Romans never settled so far south. Yet here we find undoubted evidence of Roman influence with distinct Egyptian characteristics, facing lions of Egyptian style, along with pilasters and arched openings carved with what might be called Renaissance treatment! The date of the latest buildings cannot be earlier than 200 A.D. while some structures here may possibly go back to 1,000 years B.C. These ruins are a puzzle as to period of their erection, that can only be solved by scientific search. The danger is, that if not protected till the time comes for legitimate inquiry, they are in such a crumbling condition that ignorant digging, or search for treasure, may destroy them entirely. Several of these temples at Naga though erected for Egyptian, have been subsequently applied to Christian worship, as is shown by the symbol of the cross which they bear.



MESSAURAT, FROM THE SOUTH.

Csillaud.

One of them has been approached by an avenue of sheep, or lambs, of which several remain. This is another Egyptian feature in architecture. The Egyptians had the Sphinx ram-headed to typify their God Amon, the Christians imitated the style but transformed the sphinxes into figures of the sacred Lamb. Duemichen proved the Christian date of the stone Lamb from Soba. The wave of Christianity had carried the Cross to the remotest corners of the Sudan, and every shrine of the old faith had been converted to Christian worship.

An ancient road led directly south from Naga, for eighty miles to SOBA on the Blue Nile. There are said to be the ruins of several towns along this route. At Soba there are, or were, colossal Lambs exactly similar to those at Naga, and an important Christian Church to which a separate chapter is devoted. (See Chapter IX.)

Between Naga and the Nile a great solitary mountain rises out of the wilderness, Gebel Buerib acting as a landmark. This is a great contrast to the many mountains and valleys which surround Wadi el Suфра and Messaurat.

MESSAURAT EL NAGA.

Some four hours' journey north of this, the road leads through a ravine to the ruins of Messaurat. Lepsius explains that this word is Nubian for "walls adorned with pictures" and is applied to all the remains of cities hereabouts. The country is covered with grass and bushes and is good land. Hoskins passed the ancient bed of a canal for storing rain water, for it is high to receive the Nile. Lepsius saw in various places, cisterns then empty, made to store up the water, for this region has its rainy season.

Messaurat possesses immense remains of antiquity, one group of ruins alone measures nearly 3,000 feet around its square enclosure. Lepsius thinks it is not of very high antiquity, but evidently did not spend much time on its investigation. The temples here have tasteful columns of novel design, and must have been very beautiful.



MESSAURAT EL NAGA : CENTRAL TEMPLE FROM THE EAST.

Cailland.

The "little" temple at Messaurat has pillars with sculptures of riders on lions and elephants, and although Lepsius, who was in search for Egyptian art, calls them "barbaric," the work shows much good taste and free original treatment. The huge artificial cistern here called Wot Mahemût must have stored up an enormous quantity of water and the country requires to revert to the ancient means to restore its fertility. The bricks are frequently found to have been burnt in these regions, to stand the heavy tropical rains. Not one of these canals and cisterns is now put to any use, they seem to have been neglected for centuries.

WADI EL SUFRA.

The mountain chain which Lepsius calls Jebel el Naga has to be followed for two hours in a northward direction, until we come to a ravine, opening into a more elevated valley, el Siléha, which widens out and is overgrown with grass and bushes,

WADI EL SUFRA, RUINED CITIES.

and brings us to Jebel Logar. This region is called el Sufra, or the Table, a very expressive appellation for the flat volcanic elevation of which it consists. Here lie another group of ruins, which were visited and depicted by Caillaud and Lepsius and by Hoskins, but he gave them another name in error. These show a very refined quality of work and great originality of design. Lepsius dubbed them "late style," "younger than Naga." So he did not bestow much time on describing



WADI EL SUFRA.

Hoskins.

them, though he engraved one of the columns, which is reproduced on the next page.

It struck me that this temple especially called for further research. If it be, as Lepsius seems to think, of classic date, that is, late Greek or Roman, some inscription

would certainly be found by use of the spade. The columns with the figures round the drums have a resemblance to the columns from Temple of Diana at Ephesus, in the British Museum. If I am correct in this, then it may give a clue to the date, about 500 B.C. But how could tidings of the Great Artemisian shrine reach this remote



WADI EL SUFRA.

Hoskins.

spot? It is a mystery even greater than that of the "Roman" temple at Naga, yet the resemblance is unmistakable.

By the way, Lepsius tells us that he found a Roman inscription at Naga, and also that he carried off a Greek tablet from Soba. Unfortunately he does not give us translations of what was engraved on them, as he published nothing but his volume of letters, intending to write an exhaustive work upon his wonderful voyages in the East; of course we cannot expect detailed information in mere letter-writing, and he never had time to write the great book. Doubtless these Roman and Greek tablets are in the Museum at Berlin. Lepsius was a great scholar, and if he found inscriptions in Latin and Greek so far up the Nile then we need not be much astonished if we find architecture so far away, influenced by Greek or Roman taste.

There were so many lions about, that Hoskins's men were afraid to go any farther into the desert, and he had to abandon his intended journey to Naga, which he therefore never saw. In the time of Lepsius's visit he heard of lions being about, but never saw any near his camp.

Lepsius says that these ancient cities, which evidently were rich and populous, were remarkable as being all placed far from the reach of Nile water. The valleys in many places round Naga and elsewhere, were cultivated land, and at the time of his visit, covered with dhurra stubble. The inhabitants of Shendi, Ban Naga, Metemma and villages far away and on both sides of the Nile, came here to cultivate the land and harvest dhurra. The tropical rain is sufficient to fertilize the soil of this extensive region, and was evidently stored in tanks which can still be seen.



COLUMN FROM WADI EL SUFRA.

It is interesting to note, in reference to Lepsius's discovery of the name of "Kandake" on the pyramids and temples in the Isle of Meroë, the connection between that lady and the story of the conversion to Christianity of the vizier of an Ethiopian queen of the same name (Candace in our Scriptures). This event took place after the Romans had sent an army into Ethiopia to punish this southern potentate for refusing to pay tribute and for raising an army to invade Roman territory. Augustus treated her leniently and she was allowed to make peace. This permitted her vizier to make the pilgrimage to Palestine, where Philip baptized him (Acts viii). There was a tradition that in this way Christianity made its way into Ethiopia, the Queen of that country, with her people, having quickly embraced the Faith of the Cross, when its tidings reached her country.

166

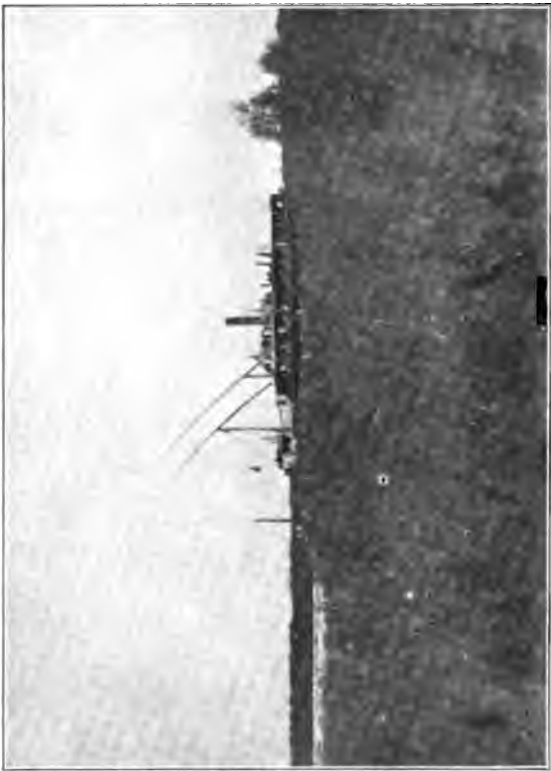




KHARTOUM : RIVER FRONT.



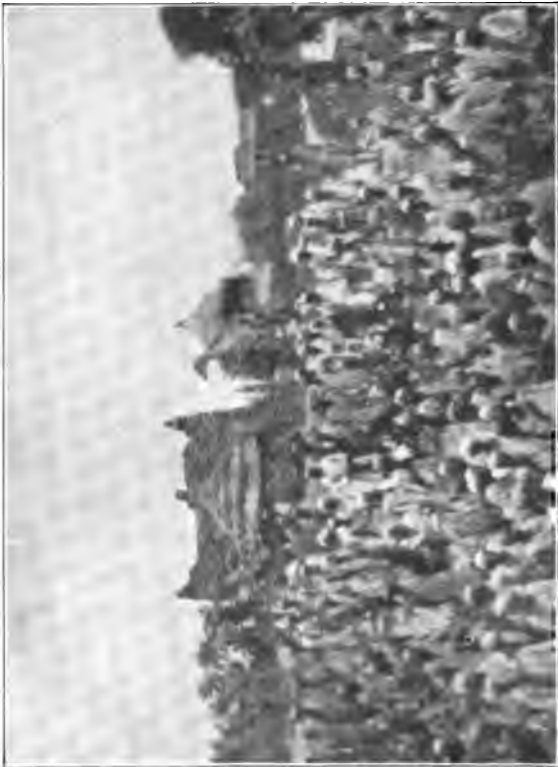
NATIVES OF KAWA WELCOMING STEAMERS EN ROUTE TO FASHODA.



EN ROUTE TO FASHODA, SEPTEMBER, 1898. STEAMER IN SUDD.



GUNBOATS EN ROUTE TO FASHODA, SEPTEMBER, 1898.



NATIVES AT KAWA WATCHING STEAMERS GOING TO FASHODA.

edge of the Nile. A tall mast was brought, ready to hoist the British and Egyptian flags; nothing had been forgotten.

After a polite message had been conveyed to M. Marchand, asking him to visit the Sirdar, representing the Khedive of Egypt, whose territory had been infringed, M. Marchand and another French officer came on board the vessel and the Sirdar received them alone.

Lord Kitchener is a man of deeds, not words; he has never told us the details of the conversation, but the result was that he did not insist on the French flag being pulled down from the fort, leaving that to be decided by diplomacy later. But he hoisted the Egyptian flag on the old Egyptian fort. The Sudanese band struck up the Khedivial anthem, the Sirdar himself called for three cheers for the Khedive.



MM. MARCHAND AND GERMAIN MOUNTING TO UPPER DECK OF THE
SIRDAR'S STEAMER AT FASHODA.

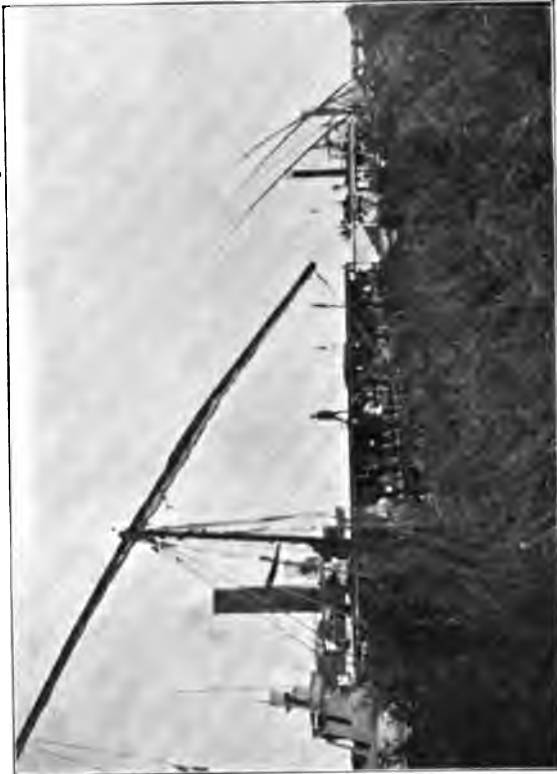
The British flag had been all the time flying from the *Dal* in an adjoining creek. When the details came to be known, much sympathy was felt for Marchand and his little band. They left France years before and knew nothing of the recent events in Europe and Egypt. Kitchener seems at once to have gained the respect of his visitor, and they

parted good friends. The "whisky and soda" incident, related hereafter, no doubt happened, and newspapers were provided, giving recent history to the belated Frenchmen.

An account of the "*affaire* Fashoda" has been recently (August, 1904) published by the *Figaro* newspaper. This revives an almost forgotten episode, which, had we not had a man like Kitchener on the spot, might have plunged us into war with our nearest continental neighbours. Fortunately, Kitchener's quiet but strong personality brushed aside all hasty action. Marchand, a brave and intrepid explorer, had only done his duty. When the British flag was hoisted, almost alongside that of the French, it gave time to their Government to weigh the matter well. Within three months they not only hauled down their flag and evacuated Fashoda, but a settlement of "spheres of



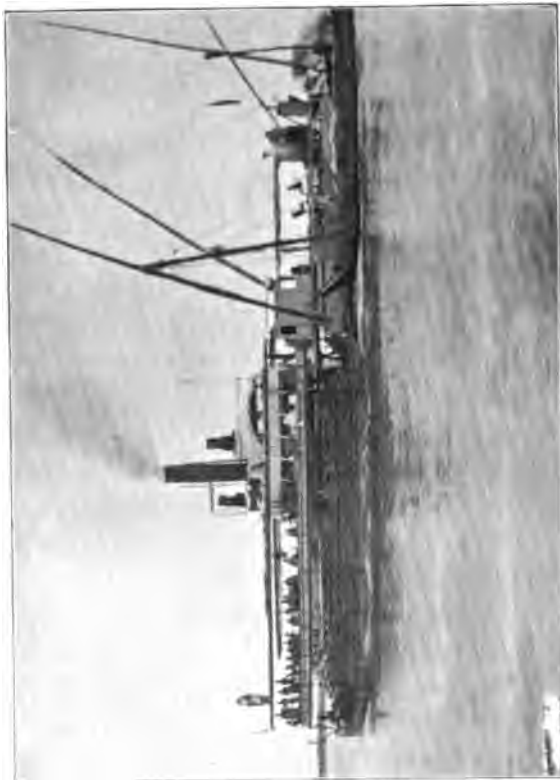
NATIVES OF KAWA WELCOMING THE FIRST STEAMER EN ROUTE TO FASHODA.



EN ROUTE TO FASHODA : A HALT IN THE SUDD.



EN ROUTE TO FASHODA, SEPTEMBER, 1898.



EN ROUTE TO FASHODA, 1898.

influence" was the outcome of the "*affaire*," and we are now better friends than we have ever been with our nearest neighbours, while the boundaries of the Anglo-Egyptian Sudan are long since definitely settled.

Colonel Marchand states that he, when chief of the Congo Nile Mission, had had an interview with Lord Kitchener at Fashoda in 1898. Colonel Marchand recounts how Lord Kitchener first learnt of his presence at Fashoda through some Sudanese prisoners, who were captured by the Anglo-Egyptian force just after they had been beaten by the French Mission.

On the arrival of the Egyptian flotilla at the French post, a British officer—



MM. MARCHAND AND GERMAIN COMING TO VISIT THE
SIRDAR ON ARRIVAL AT FASHODA.

Colonel Lord Edward Cecil—had gone to Colonel Marchand to inform him of Lord Kitchener's desire to have an interview with him, and had requested him, in view of the British commander's superior rank, to pay his visit to Lord Kitchener first. Colonel Marchand had accordingly proceeded on board the steamer in which Lord Kitchener was. He was alone on the bridge of the steamer.

Colonel Marchand continues—"I saluted him. He returned my salute, and coming towards me with outstretched hand, asked me to be seated, and complimented me on my expedition, Lord Kitchener meanwhile asking me about our march and I questioning him about his victory at Omdurman. A few minutes later I returned to the fort, where Kitchener came to return my visit, and gave me news of France." In the course of this

conversation the Sirdar informed Colonel Marchand of the change of Ministry in France. In his version of the interview Marchand winds up with—"Very well," said Kitchener, in the best of temper. "Then let us have a whisky and soda." No doubt the last sentence is a true bit of history that actually occurred. They then separated, Kitchener promising to send him some newspapers.

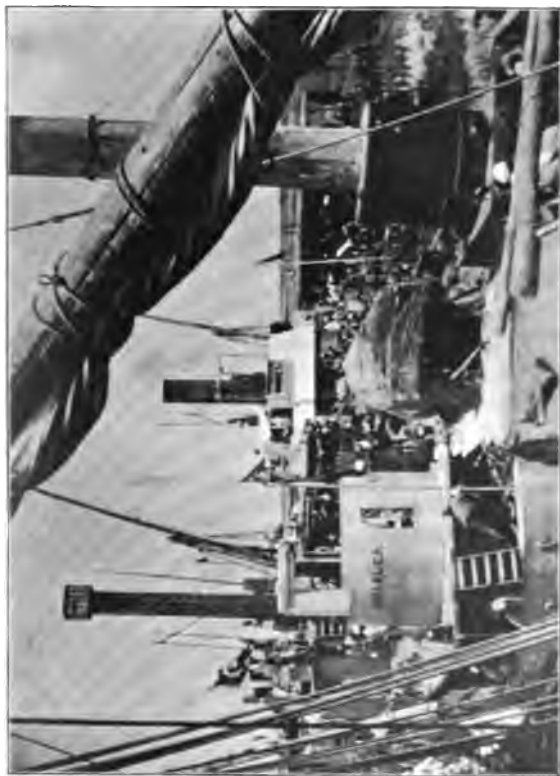
Marchand's detailed account of the conversation occupies half a column of the *Figaro*. It is rather theatrical in style, and may really not have been written by Marchand at all. In any case it is only a one-sided relation of a short interview, and as Lord Kitchener has never given us his recollections of the event, may be



CAPTURE OF THE DERVISH STEAMER "SAFIA," SEPTEMBER, 1898.



NATIVES AT KAWA BRINGING WOOD TO OUR STEAMERS EN ROUTE TO FASHODA, 1898.



CAPTURE OF DERVISH STEAMER "SAFIA" AT RENK, SEPTEMBER, 1898.



TAKING IN WOUNDED AND PRISONERS AFTER THE ACTION AT RENK, SEPTEMBER, 1898.



BAND PLAYING TO SHILLUKS NEAR FASHODA.

passed over now. Lord Kitchener was evidently very polite to the French gentlemen, and offered them what help he could.

Having hoisted the British and Egyptian flags, south of the French fort flag at Fashoda, a battalion of Sudanese soldiers, with four guns and a gunboat, were left at this point under command of Major Jackson. Fashoda was evacuated on the 11th December, 1898, by Marchand

and his companions, and proceeding by the Sobat and Abyssinia and the Red Sea, they arrived in France in the following May.

The Anglo-Egyptian troops proceeded up the Nile, and hoisted their flags at the Sobat, where a battalion of Sudanese soldiers was left as garrison, under Captain Gamble. During the Dervish rule the Nile passage had been neglected, and the Bahr el Jebel was found to be completely barred with sudd. Major Peake was sent with a gunboat up the Bahr el Ghazal, and hoisted our flags at Meshra el Rek. Major Stanton explored the Bahr el Zeraf for 175 miles, hoisting the flags at all stations while the Sobat and its tributaries were explored, surveyed, and mapped for nearly 300 miles. Thus the prompt action of Kitchener in the Fashoda case led to the peaceful recovery for Egypt of all the southern Sudan. The photographs in this chapter were given me by Sir Reginald Wingate. Marchand's portrait I got from a friend in Paris.



COMMANDANT MARCHAND.

EXPEDITION TO FIND THE KHALIFA.

THE KHALIFA'S LAST STAND.

But the Khalifa was known to be still uncaught; he was skulking away in the deserted, almost unknown, region, near Sherkeila, in the country of his tribe, the Baggara. Wingate's Intelligence scouts reported the Dervishes to have but 3,000 men and, being short of food, to be moving towards Jebel Gedir, about 100 miles west of the White Nile, and 200 miles north of Fashoda: here he must have collected recruits. In January, 1899, a force was organised and despatched to Kaka on the White Nile, some 400 miles from Khartoum, whence it marched to Fungor, 50 miles inland. But no Khalifa could be found—pursuit in such a land without supplies would be disastrous, and so the expedition was brought back to Omdurman, as it could discover no enemy to strike.

Suddenly, in November, 1899, news arrived that the Khalifa had formed an army, and was marching northward to conquer Omdurman, or die in the attempt. He had sent onwards the Emir Ahmet Fedil, to the Nile, and on the 12th November, had fired volleys at the *Sultan*, our best gunboat. Early the next morning two Sudanese battalions were sent up the White Nile to Abba Island, where they landed, occupying without resistance the Camp of Ahmet Fedil, who fled inland. But the Khalifa was still at large, and his exact locality had been ascertained by Wingate, our keen intelligence officer. On receipt of this opportune information, Lord Kitchener wisely deputed to Wingate himself the command of the little band who were to "wipe out" this skulking scoundrel. So Sir Reginald Wingate started from Omdurman, on the 13th November, 1899, for Fashi Shoya on the left bank of the White Nile opposite Abba Island.

They reached Nefissa, where Ahmet Fedil had been encamped the day before, but had withdrawn to a pool called Abu Adil. Wingate immediately sent on the cavalry,



ON THE RETURN FROM THE EXPEDITION AGAINST THE KHALIFA.



THE EMIR YUNIS, FORMERLY DERVISH GOVERNOR OF DONGOLA.
(One of the few Emirs who escaped death—he hid under the Khalifa's body at Omdebreikat,
24th November, 1899.)

moment, but their help was not required, for the Dervish rush had been by that time stopped for good, by the fire of the guns, the foremost of their number being shot down within ninety-four paces. Ahmet Fedil himself turned and with several Emirs fled southwards to join the main body of Dervishes which, in strength about 4,000, was moving northward to Gedid, 24 miles off. This was where the water was, and it was imperative for us to reach the wells before the enemy.

Accordingly at 11.45 p.m. on the 22nd, Wingate's force started off, marched through the whole night and reached their destination the next day, watered their thirsty animals and refreshed themselves, resuming their march at midnight of the 23rd, and by four

camel corps, Maxims and irregulars, with orders to engage the enemy, and hold firm to his position till the infantry arrived. At 10 a.m. the Maxims opened fire from a hill about 800 yards from the enemy's camp. With their usual pluck, the Dervishes left their camp, made straight for the hill, which was bare of trees for some 100 yards from the base, and desperately tried to carry it. The Sudanese infantry arrived at this



IN CAMP NEAR GEDID—EXPEDITION AGAINST THE KHALIFA, 1899.



WOUNDED DERVISHES AFTER THE ACTION AT ABU ADIL ON 22 NOV., 1899.



COLONEL LEWIS, TAKEN HALF-AN-HOUR AFTER THE KHALIFA'S DEATH AT OMDEBREIKAT, NOV., 1899.



MAJOR WATSON, RETURN FROM KHALIFA EXPEDITION.



SIR R. WINGATE WRITING HIS DISPATCH AT OMDEBREIKAT, ANNOUNCING THE DEATH OF THE KHALIFA (TAKEN HALF-AN-HOUR AFTER THE LAST SHOT WAS FIRED).

o'clock the next morning reached a grassy plateau overlooking the Khalifa's camp at Omdebrikat. This time, at least, the Khalifa meant to make a stand. Instead of keeping under the shelter of a hill, as at Omdurman, he placed himself in the forefront of the battle, and his principal Emirs—some 15 or 20 in number, with the single exception of the skulking Osman Digna,¹—dismounted from their horses, grouped themselves round their chief, and led the fighting men to the attack. It was, however, the usual tragic story. At the proper moment Maxims and 12-pounders opened fire upon the devoted fanatics. Rifles joined in the affray at 400 yards, and in the desperate charge, the Khalifa and most of his Emirs perished. Abdullahi, Ali Wad Helu, Ahmet Fedil and many other important Emirs, on seeing the day lost, spread their sheepskins under them and calmly awaited death. The Dervish loss was 600, and some 3,000 captives and 6,000 women and children were taken. The Khalifa's son

was taken prisoner. The Egyptian loss was 4 killed and 29 wounded. This victory finally stamped out Dervish rule in the Sudan.



The victory of Sir Reginald Wingate brought him much deserved renown. On the very day of the Khalifa's death, his only little daughter was born, in Scotland.

AFTER THE ACTION AT ABU ADIL, 22ND NOVEMBER, 1899. WATERING HORSES. Queen Victoria at once telegraphed her congratulations on the victory to Sir Reginald, expressing her intention of becoming the infant's godmother and her wish that it should be called Victoria. May Miss Victoria Wingate long be spared to gladden her parents' hearts. She is a sweet little lady, resembling her genial father in a wonderful degree.

I am enabled, through the kindness of Sir Reginald Wingate, to illustrate the remarkable scenes of the 24th November, 1899 (and also those of the Fashoda affair), from his own photographs.

¹ Osman Digna escaped now, but after doing his best to sow sedition in the north-east, he got no support and his hiding-place was betrayed by his own people. He was captured in the Wariba Hills, 90 miles from Suakin, on 18th January, 1900, and is now a prisoner, with other Dervishes, at Damietta.



THE KHALIFA KILLED AT OMDEBREIKAT.



THE KHALIFA AND AHMET FEDIL KILLED AT OMDEBREIKAT, 24 NOV., 1899.



THE KHALIFA, AHMET FEDIL, KHALIFA ALI WAD HELU, 2 SONS OF THE KHALIFA, 1 SON OF THE MAHDI, KILLED AT OMDEBREIKAT, 24 NOV., 1899.



AHMET FEDIL (THE KHALIFA'S CHIEF GENERAL), KILLED AT OMDEBREIKAT, 24 NOV., 1899.

With the death of the Khalifa and his gang there was no more resistance, and the British rule became everywhere popular and welcomed by those who had backed the Mahdi, as success is welcomed generally in the Orient. The little army got back to Omdurman on the 29th November. They had only left on the 18th—having marched 61 miles in 61 consecutive hours, fought two successful engagements, destroyed the Khalifa and his chief Emirs, and the last remnant of Dervish tyranny, and brought back some 10,000 prisoners.

On the 22nd December, 1899, Lord Kitchener being called away to the South African War, Sir Reginald Wingate was appointed Sirdar and Governor-General of Egypt and the Anglo-Egyptian Sudan.

Since Sir Reginald Wingate became Governor-General he has had an arduous task,



THE GIBBA WHICH WAS WORN BY THE KHALIFA WHEN KILLED.

the exploration and development, as well as the government of a vast, hitherto unknown territory, almost as extensive as Europe. Every season he carries out Official Inspections of the various provinces, all of which are as widely differing as they are remote from each other. In these inspections he is often accompanied by his old friend Sir Rudolf

von Slatin, who has made the Sudan his home, and whose official position is that of Inspector-General. These Inspections will shortly have embraced every province of the Sudan. The Governor-General besides has already given the series of photographs which embellish this book. These comprise the White Nile and the Blue Nile, with their tributaries; the Atbara and Suakin; with visits to Kassala, Gedaref, Sennar, and to Kordofan. These photographs, and many others supplied me by Sir W. Garstin, and other Chiefs of Departments and many of their officers and other friends, will afford pictures of the scenery and native life of these remote regions which will be more interesting than any lengthy description of mine. The valleys of the Nile's tributaries will thus be illustrated by those who have explored them. With the story of the Upper Nile, I propose to give the illustrations of the recent remarkable expedition of Mr. C. E. Dupuis to Abyssinia and the Blue



DERVISH PRISONERS AFTER THE DEATH OF THE KHALIFA, COL. MAHON
IN FRONT.



THREE IMPORTANT EMIRS TAKEN PRISONERS AT OMDEBREIKAT, 24 NOV., 1899.
KHATIM, MUSA, AND THE BROTHER OF MUHAMAD OF THE ATBARA.



THE EMIR SHEIKH ED DIN (THE KHALIFA'S ELDEST SON) LYING WOUNDED
AFTER THE BATTLE OF OMDEBREIKAT, 24 NOV., 1899.



REFUGEES ESCAPING FROM THE KHALIFA, NOV., 1899.

Nile and Atbara. This intrepid explorer has also given me all his beautiful photographs for publication.

It was necessary, in order to tell the story of Khartoum, to add to it that of the Fashoda affair and the death of the Khalifa. A pause will now be made to visit the great Nile beyond Khartoum, to its remotest origin at the Equatorial Lakes. Having followed the White Nile to its source, we shall proceed to explore the eastern provinces—the Blue Nile and its tributaries. That accomplished we shall visit Abyssinia with Mr. Dupuis. Subsequently the western provinces, Kordofan, Darfur, and the Bahr el Ghazal will conclude our volume.



ONE OF THE SUDAN DEVELOPMENT COMPANY'S STEAMERS.

CHAPTER XII.

THE NILE BEYOND KHARTOUM.—PART FIRST.



"PEACE HATH HER VICTORIES NO LESS RENOWNED THAN WAR."

LIEUTENANT-COLONEL MALCOLM PEAKE, R.A.

THE CONQUEROR OF THE SUDD.

GENERAL DESCRIPTION OF THE NILE BEYOND KHARTOUM.
THE SUDD AND ITS CONQUEST. LORD CROMER'S VISIT TO GONDOKORO, DESCRIBED BY
THE COUNTESS VALDA GLEICHEN. THE INSPECTIONS OF THE GOVERNOR-
GENERAL. THE SOBAT. LAKE NO.



PAPYRUS.

The Papyrus plant provided the means of recording, for our benefit, the ancient civilisation of Egypt. Its use has departed, and the plant is extinct in the old land. But unfortunately, it flourishes exceedingly in the south. It is the greatest impediment to our efforts to improve the Sudan, and this baneful plant brings destruction to 35,000 square miles of its territory. A papyrus grove, nevertheless, is a very beautiful object.

CHAPTER XII.

GENERAL DESCRIPTION OF THE NILE BEYOND KHARTOUM.

THE great Nile receives its last tributary at the junction of the Atbara; its next at Khartoum, where the Blue Nile pours in the Abyssinian supplies. Beyond Khartoum and as far as Lake No, the main channel is known as the White Nile; above Lake No the natives call the main Nile stream the Bahr el Jebel. The White Nile and its tributaries supply much of the fertilizing waters which form the life-blood of Egypt. The great river Nile traverses the land for 2,069 miles from south to north, receiving on its course the Bahr el Ghazal and the Sobat before passing Khartoum.

The summer flood of the Nile is mainly caused by the tropical rains. It is generally believed that the fertilizing mud with which the High Nile flood is charged, comes from Abyssinia, where the Sobat as well as the Atbara and Blue Nile take their rise. The Bahr el Ghazal brings waters from the west, the Bahr el Jebel from the Great Equatorial Lakes. The flood which we call High Nile at its height moves about 100 miles per day. Notwithstanding the amount of water used for irrigation and the loss by evaporation on its long journey about half of the volume of its summer flood is still lost in the Mediterranean. The Assuan Dam, when fully developed, will yet leave a large margin of wasted water for use in the Sudau, which can be irrigated by means of flood and catchment basins, but the time is distant when the surplus—now lost—will be entirely devoted to this purpose.

We are apt to forget how recently the world knew the truth about the mysterious sources of the Nile. The old geographers, Strabo, Ptolemy and mediæval Arabian writers spoke of its origin being in great lakes, but all their learning had been forgotten. It was only in 1862 that Speke and Grant discovered that the Great Lake, now known as the Victoria Nyanza, was the main source of the White Nile. Sir Samuel Baker in 1863 discovered the Albert Nyanza, but the actual course of the Nile was not mapped till Gordon's time, 1874.

During the ensuing years this portion of the river was often blocked with sudd, and at the time of Kitchener's conquest of the Dervishes, it had thus been completely closed. An expedition, under Major (now Colonel) Peake, succeeded in clearing it in 1899–1900. This intrepid officer did his work well; there is no likelihood of the clear channel now existing being closed permanently again. The first sudd cutting was done under extraordinary difficulties. I met Major Peake at Khartoum shortly after his great work and was much impressed by the tale of his arduous labours, of which I have heard most laudatory accounts since from his chief, Sir William Garstin.

As we have already voyaged by the Nile as far as Fashoda, when describing the Marchand incident (in Chapter XI.), and also when the Expedition under Sir Reginald Wingate extinguished the Khalifa and his Emirs, we shall now confine our attention to the remainder of the great river's course, as far as its origin in the Equatorial Lakes, returning afterwards to describe the Blue Nile and its ramifications, and finally the Bahr el Ghazal and other tributaries.

The obstacles to navigation on the White Nile at any time of the year on this enormous journey, are unimportant, the only great trouble is in the region of the Sudd.¹ All the modern traffic on the Upper Nile is carried on by steamers, and for these



CUTTING A TRENCH IN THE SUDD.

Sir W. Garstin.

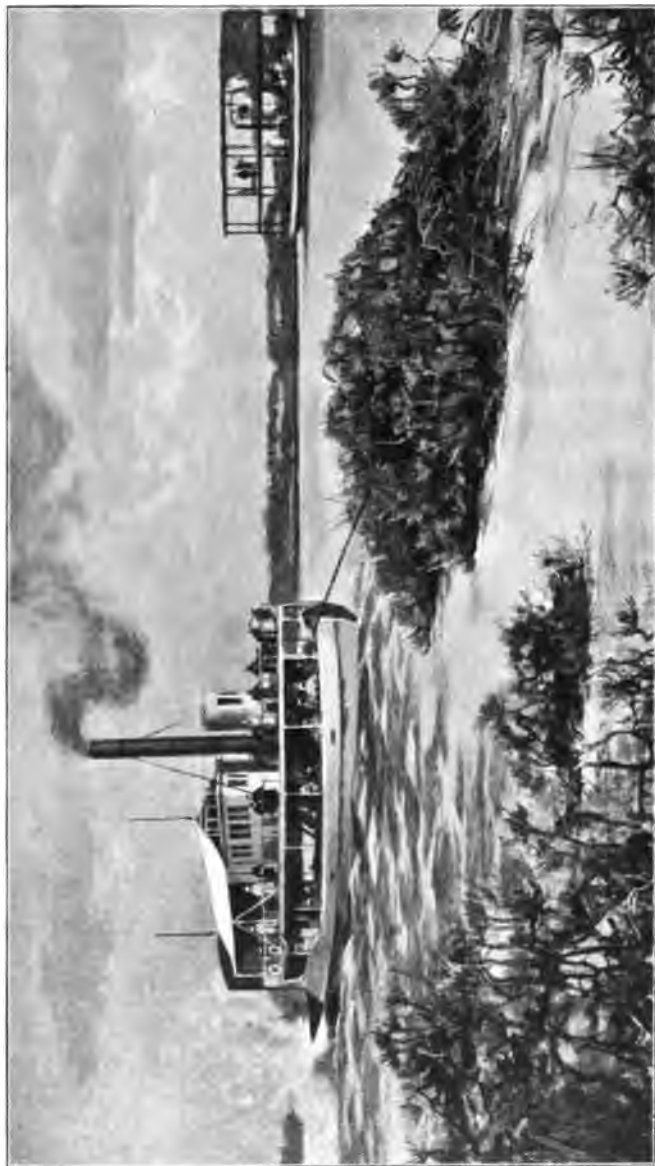
there always will be scarcity of fuel along the White Nile and beyond. As yet, no coal has been found in the Sudan. Coal costs £6 a ton at Khartoum, but when the railway from Suakin is at work, it will drop to one-half. Trees fit for fuel are scarce, and the natives have an ugly habit of burning down the incipient forests to promote pasturage, and it is nearly impossible to stop this custom. Therefore, supplies of wood for the steamers have to be brought from afar and stored up at wood stations on the banks.

The Bahr el Jebel, when it flows into Lake No, varies in width from 100 yards to a mile. But from the masthead of a steamer it is seen to be a sea of grass and reeds on either side of this channel, and the real banks are 4, 8, or even 12 miles distant on each side. Under all this

grass is water, slowly making its way down to fill up the waste of the absorption by sand and sun. The grassy islands are so dense, that it is quite possible to walk on the surface, and many native tribes actually live on the floating masses of vegetation; fish and the stalks of a certain water lily, forming their only food. The surface of the water is covered with a dense tangled mass of papyrus, ambach, and other water plants which, in places, grow to a height of from 15 feet to 30 feet.

¹ "Sudd" means an impediment, a stoppage. In fact a dam is called "sudd." It is pronounced as our word "mud."

MAJOR PEAKE'S CAMPAIGN AGAINST THE SUDD.



THE SUDD : STEAMER HAULING AWAY SEVERED BLOCK, BAHR EL JEBEL.

Sir William Garstin.

At the rise and fall of the Nile, quantities of the grass get torn away and float down stream; these jam in the channels and form "sudd" blocks. The open channel is thus very tortuous and the current slow, and at Lake No, where the Bahr el Ghazal comes in from the west (should its waters be low at the time, not enough to clear the channel) a block frequently occurs at a point where it turns suddenly to the east.

The huge marshes where the sudd is troublesome have an extent of some 35,000 square miles. They form a triangle, whose northern base extends 200 miles west from the Bahr el Zeraf, and the apex lies about Bor, 250 miles S.S.E. of Lake No. Through



BURNING THE SUDD BEFORE CUTTING IT. *Sir W. Garstin.*

all this the passage of water is sluggish, and the loss by evaporation must be enormous. Sir William Garstin estimates that 65 per cent. is lost in this way. The water is very shallow, nowhere more than 2 to 6 feet deep, except in the river channels. To the eye the effect is extraordinary. A vast extent of brilliant green papyrus, feathery weeds, and sword grass, 5 to 15 feet above the water, broken by occasional patches of light ambach trees and cane, with channels of water, pools, and lagoons dotting the swamp, and here and there a sparse tree on the horizon. Many floating islands of growing vegetable matter are met with.

Patches of mud or solid ground are sometimes seen. In some places there is much bird and animal life, the ubiquitous crocodile, and in the south every kind of game.

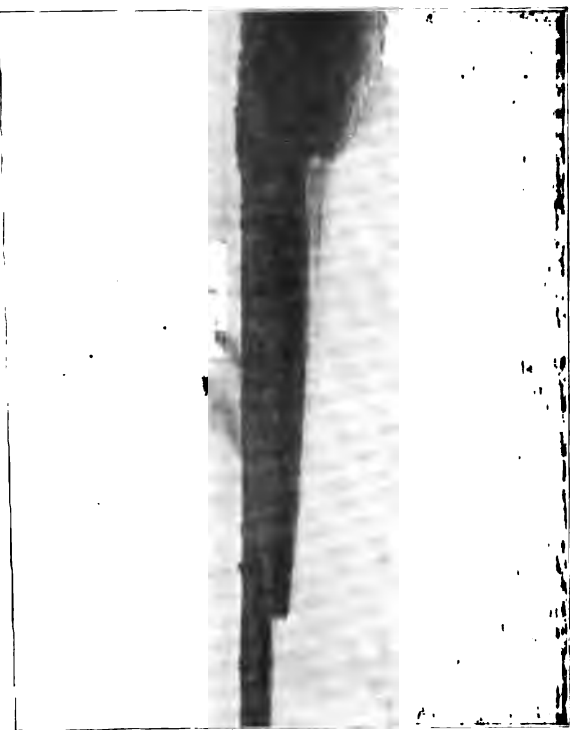
There also elephants, giraffe, buffalo, and many sorts of antelope abound, hippopotamus being especially numerous. These huge beasts flounder on the floating islands, and many sink to die, their bodies polluting the mass. Insects abound, many of them venomous. Coarse fish fill the waters. For the first 150 miles south of Lake No there are no human inhabitants. Thereafter Dinkas and their villages are seen up to Bor, 384 miles. After that the Bari country, and more population on the east bank than on the west. To Major Peake, as has been said above, is due the success of first cutting a clear channel in 1899-1900, when owing to the Dervish occupation, there had been, for years, no traffic for steamers, and the waterway had become closed solidly.



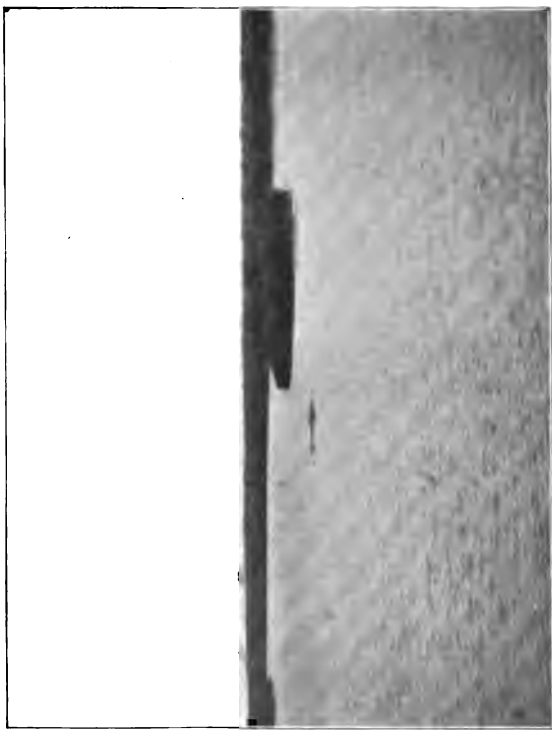
SUDD, BAHR EL JEBEL.



FLOATING SUDD ISLAND, BAHR EL JEBEL.



SUDD, BAHR EL JEBEL. GRASS FIRES.



GRASS FIRES. SUDD ISLAND, BAHR EL JEBEL.

Five gunboats, with five British and some Egyptian officers, 100 Sudanese, and 800 Dervish prisoners, attacked the sudd on 16th December, 1899. By 27th March, 1900, by means of hard and continuous labour, 14 blocks out of 29 had been cleared, opening up 82 miles of river channel. Peake Bey (his Egyptian title), avoiding the remaining blocks by using side channels, arrived at Shambé, 25th April, 1890, proceeding thence in clear water to Rejaf, 5th May, 1890. Four of the remaining five blocks were cleared by Lieut. Drury, R.N., in January, 1901, and only one 22 miles long still remains. This block it was found impossible to remove, but a "false channel" exists by which it can be avoided.

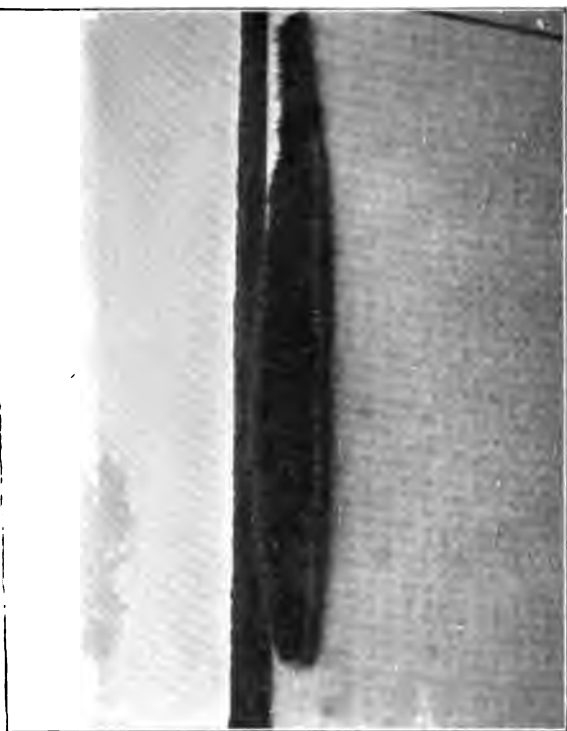
It is probable no more clearing may be necessary for a long time. There is now a monthly mail steamer, and other craft which keep the fairway open merely by their passage. Lieut. Drury took up the difficult task when Peake's health broke down under the strain, and completed the work nobly. He too lost his health from the rigours of the climate. It is pleasant to think that he also has recovered his health and now fills an important office at Suakin.

The method employed by Peake Bey to clear the sudd was to cut and burn the whole of the vegetation growing on the surface. This was done by a party of men with swords, hoes, and axes. Immediately after, the line for the first channel, about 12 yards wide, was marked out; this was trenched by the soldiers and Dervish prisoners (armed with hoes, picks, axes, and saws) into pieces 4 yards square.

After cutting down about a foot from the surface, the water infiltrated; the men continued cutting until, owing to the depth of the water, they were unable to get deeper. Holdfasts of telegraph poles were then driven as far as they would go round the edge of each piece. After this a $1\frac{1}{2}$ -inch flexible steel-wire hawser was sunk as deep as it would go, by means of the prolonged poles, all round the piece to be removed, the ends of it were made fast to the halliards in the bow of the gunboat, one on the starboard side and one on the port, leaving sufficient slack wire to allow the steamer to go astern some 20 or 30 yards before she got the strain; "full speed astern" was then ordered. Full speed was kept up continually if the piece showed any sign of moving, and until it came away gradually.

As soon as the piece was quite clear, one end of the hawser was cast off, and the piece was allowed to float down the stream; the holdfasts were pulled out by means of a wire rope, one end of which was made fast to the bow of the steamer, and the other by a hitch to the end of the holdfast.

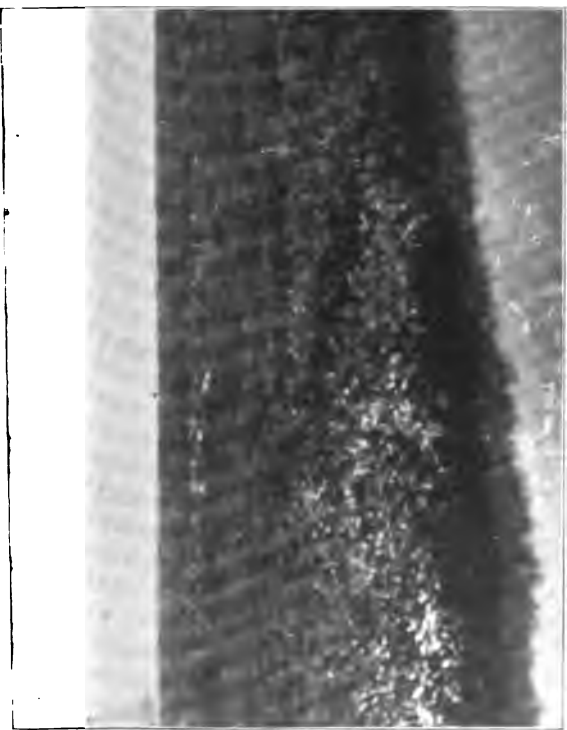
If the piece showed no signs of coming away, the engines were reversed, and the steamer was brought close up to the sudd, and then went astern again. This was repeated again and again until the piece became detached. Some took as much as two hours to get away. Sometimes with very thin sudd, after it had been trenched, the steamer would be run up with its bow on the sudd, and on going astern, would



SUDD FLOATING ISLAND. BAHR EL JEBEL.



SUDD, BAHR EL JEBEL.



SUDD, BAHR EL JEBEL.



SUDD, BAHR EL JEBEL.

carry the piece with her; also with light sudd a grapnel anchor fixed to the steamer when going astern is sufficient to tear away the piece. Sir William Garstin supplied me with the photographs of these arduous operations which graphically serve to explain the process employed.

Often the sudd was found with roots growing to the bottom. In this case, a grapnel or ordinary anchor was sunk to the bottom of the river and dragged along by the steamer. As soon as the leading steamer had opened up the channel a sufficient length to enable her not to interfere with a steamer working behind her, another steamer was put to work, the same way as the first, to widen the channel.

All this hard work under a burning sun through water often rotten, and emitting an abominable stench from dead hippopotami or other animals, surrounded by poisonous insects, speaks well for the men who have saved the Sudan. It proves how our soldiers wage war in times of peace, running risks equal to those of warfare. This was literally turning their swords into ploughshares.

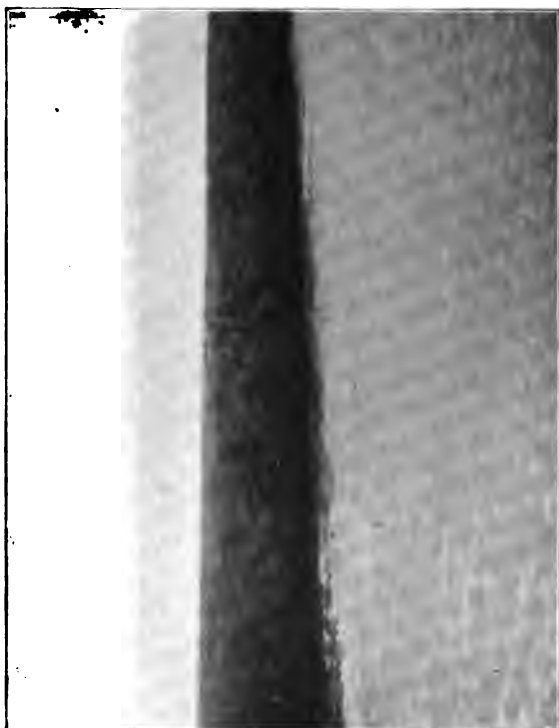
The officers were soldiers sent to fight the Dervishes, the gunboats were fitted out for the same campaign, the work being done by Dervish prisoners. All the last were men taken red-handed in rebellion, who now were compelled, for the good of their own land, to do perhaps the first useful labour they had ever done in their lives.

Once through the sudd region, the course is mainly clear to Gondokoro on the frontier. Between Rejaf and Bedden there are rocks that might be blasted away. Boats can go to Kiro, then there are more rapids, and the last 15 miles before reaching Nimule are quite impassable to any steamers or boats. From hence the Nile is free of any obstacles up to Lake Albert. Between Dufile and Lake Albert the Nile is very sluggish, and papyrus islands again abound. The breadth of the channel varies.

A monthly Government steamer, 13 days, runs from Khartoum to Gondokoro (the Nile post of Uganda), leaving Khartoum on the 15th, and returning from Gondokoro for the north, about the 29th of each month, arrives at Khartoum about the 10th. This steamer calls at all intermediate stations south of Goz abu Guma. There are also private companies engaged in commerce, which is developing. It has always been Lord Cromer's policy to open up trade by public enterprise. A country so recently won from barbarism has to be in leading strings, till its people are educated to industrial pursuits. The change in the few years since we took it over is remarkable. But for the opening of river traffic it is necessary to enlist outside aid, therefore we wish the Sudan Development Company all success. One of their steamers is engraved on page 182.



BARI HUT AND CANOE. BAHR EL JEBEL.



SUDD : BAHR EL JEBEL.



SUDD : DINKA VILLAGES BEYOND BAHR EL JEBEL.



SUDD AND GRASS FIRES IN DISTANCE.

LORD CROMER'S VISIT TO GONDOKORO.

Lord and Lady Cromer, the Sirdar and Lady Wingate, and a small party made the entire journey from Khartoum to Gondokoro in January, 1903. A delightful account of the voyage was written by the Countess Valda Gleichen, which appeared subsequently in the *Pall Mall Magazine*.

The trip was in many ways a record one, and shows how people in good health can vary the dullness of our northern climate, with perfect enjoyment and ever-changing variety of scene. Countess Valda Gleichen has shown us what a lady can do in such circumstances. It is granted to few to have such an escort as hers, but as the direct communication from London to Gondokoro is open to anyone who has the will and the means, she may have many imitators on the same track.

Ten years ago, fully a thousand miles of the trip, from Halfa to Gondokoro and back, was the scene of rapine and misery as terrible as the world has ever known. That all this region is now peaceful, happy, contented and perfectly safe for travel is mainly due to the efforts of the leaders of this little peaceful pleasure excursion—Lord Cromer and his able assistants in the regeneration of Egypt and our Sudan.

I take the liberty of making copious extracts from this bright account of a very remarkable journey, as a means of explaining the Countess Valda Gleichen's own photographs which she has kindly entrusted to me to use as illustrations. A magazine is at best an ephemeral publication. The pithy little narrative will now, it is hoped, have a more permanent existence.

“ . . . leaving London on Friday night, the 26th of last December, by the Indian mail, reaching Cairo the following Wednesday afternoon, we started up-country as fast as a perfectly managed system of train and steamer could take us, straight to Khartoum. On the way we only stopped once for an hour, to see the colossal rock temple of Abu Simbel, and then that same afternoon (by way of a contrast) inspected the great engine works at Wady Halfa, with *ci-devant* dervishes contentedly earning their living in the workshops! That sense of contrast between the old dominion and the new became sharper still as we proceeded in a comfortable *train de luxe*, ‘lighted with electricity and furnished with sleeping-cars,’ through the very heart of the country which only five years ago was overrun by the savage fanatics of the Khalifa. At Abu Hamed, where the ghosts of the fallen Sudanese troops are reported to stand every night as sentries over the graves of their two English beys—a row of neat little bathing-houses has been erected, where the dusty traveller can leave his *wagon-lit* and have a refreshing morning tub, hot or cold according to fancy, before continuing his journey.

“At Khartoum we actually came in for an agricultural show!¹ Certainly in the Sudan

¹ A photograph of this, the first Sudanese agricultural show, by Lieutenant-Colonel Penton, is given in Chapter VIII.



WOOD SUPPLIES, GOZ ABU GUMA.



AMERICAN MISSION ON THE SOBAT RIVER.



BARIS IN THE BAHR EL JEBEL.



GONDOKORO.

civilisation marches with no uncertain step. The show was the first of its kind to be held there, and very amusing it was. The 'sheiks and notables' of the surrounding country took the deepest interest in the proceedings, and the exhibits were of a very varied description, ranging from dhurra and cotton to embossed leather books, camels, and native bedsteads, or angharebs. Another noteworthy fact was that every exhibitor won a prize, 'pour encourager les autres!'

"That afternoon—the sixth after leaving Cairo—we embarked on the Sudan Government steamer *Amkeh*, that was to take us on our further journey of nearly two thousand miles beyond Khartoum.

"Our party consisted of Lord and Lady Cromer, the Sirdar and Lady Wingate, my brother the Sudan Director of Intelligence and myself, the Sirdar's military secretary, Lord Cromer's secretary, the head of the R.A.M.C., and the head of the Sudan Government boats and steamers—a most official company, bent on pleasure and instruction. The instruction, I may say, began at once, for on turning into the White Nile just above Omdurman, the water changed immediately in colour from the usual blue-grey of the Blue Nile to a whitish yellow, the line where the two rivers join being so clearly defined as to give the most curious effect of a distinct boundary. The character of the country also on either side of the rivers varies just as much as does the colour of the water, for while the banks of the Blue Nile are wooded and fairly fertile, those of the White Nile between which we steamed were for the first two or three days flat and sandy, and covered with rough scrub of mimosa and thorn.

* * * * *

"As to four-footed game, the country was alive with it, and hartebeest, waterbuck, white-eared cob, and different kinds of antelope and gazelle, were often sighted at quite a short distance away. They apparently knew no fear, but would stop to cast interested glances at the steamer and then airily canter off, as if they knew quite well that shooting from steamers is strictly forbidden by law. On one occasion four large elephants stood in a row on the bank to look at us!¹ Each had a white paddy-bird sitting on his head busily hunting for insects, and quite undisturbed when the elephants leisurely shamled off, for the sight of the steamer speedily palled on them, to the untold woe of the photographers, who one and all had dashed for their cameras, and one and all failed ignominiously in getting a snapshot. Lamentations were loud and long; and although later on many more elephants were seen (on one occasion fifteen of them were feeding about a mile off), never again did they have such an opportunity at such close quarters. Then one day of days, as we were most of us lying limply and sleepily under the awning on the lower deck, gasping with the heat, there came an excited screech from the upper deck, and we rushed up breathless, to see, waving above the sky-line, five long necks surmounted by five tiny heads, moving slowly along one behind the other. Giraffes they were in truth; and great was our luck, for they are hardly ever seen now, and are retreating farther and farther

¹ The Countess showed the author a sketch of these elephants made by her brother, each of the monsters gravely permitting his attendant paddy-bird to mount guard on his huge cranium. It was provokingly droll, and as a sketch is unique.



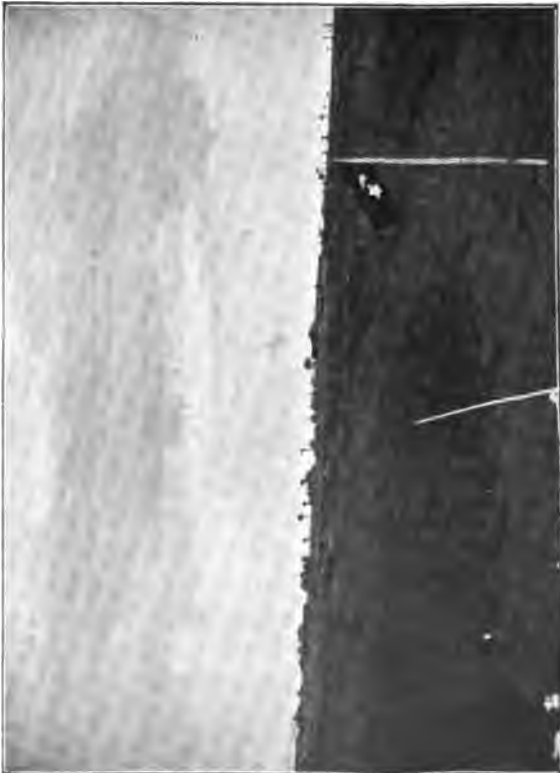
DOM PALMS, AUSTRIAN MISSION, LUL.



SHILLUK WARRIORS, FASHODA.



AT FASHI SHOYA.



FASHODA.

into Central Africa. With very strong glasses we could even make out the spots on their backs, and after they had passed out of sight we collapsed again on the lower deck, feeling that Africa had nothing more to offer us in the way of a sensation! By this time, of course, we had seen innumerable hippos; but they left so much to the imagination that they were not really very satisfactory. A black lump representing a nose, and a little behind the lump two ears just showing above the water, were as a rule all that could be seen of a hippo's large carcase. We often counted twenty or thirty in sight, for the river simply swarms with them, and they do so much damage to crops, and are so dangerous to the natives in their dug-outs, that the order has gone forth that they are to be treated as vermin and shot down as much as possible. We constantly saw their tracks on the bank, their big bodies leaving devastation in their wake, but only once had the luck to see one actually waddling along; the rest were generally peacefully blowing on the surface of the water, and dived as we approached. Hippos, however, do not like the sudd, and during the three days that we steamed through it we saw none, though they reappeared again on the other side.

"It may not be generally known how very carefully game is protected in the Sudan. The country is divided into shooting districts, and the amount and species of game which may be shot by holders of licences vary according to the district. Animals and birds are divided into classes: those that are absolutely forbidden to be killed or captured, such as the chimpanzee, eland, giraffe, rhinoceros, zebra, wild ass, ground hornbill, secretary bird and *Baleniceps Rex*; and those, on the other hand, of whom a limited number only may be killed—i.e., hartebeest, waterbuck, wild sheep, ibex, bustard, and others too numerous to mention here. Besides all these restrictions, there is a large Officers' Game Reserve between the White and Blue Niles, which is practically a sanctuary; so it is evident that as much as possible is done to prevent indiscriminate slaughter of wild beasts; this accounts also for the want of fear shown by all those that we saw; they were deeply interested and curious, but obviously not the least afraid.

"On the fourth day after leaving Khartoum we reached Fashoda, where such preparations were being made for receiving Lord Cromer that he was asked to give an hour's delay before disembarking, as we had arrived as usual before our time, and the natives were said to be pouring in from all sides. The village is some way from the river, and to get there we had to cross two khors in rough native punts. In the distance we could see dark figures excitedly running about, and then being marshalled into a kind of order by a wildly-gesticulating person in a flowing red robe and white head-dress. This, we learnt, was the Mek—the head of the Shilluks and chief of Fashoda, and a potentate who is rather fond of giving trouble. However, on this occasion he was on his best behaviour, and, though he had an evil countenance, nothing could have been more savagely dignified than his manner when he was presented to Lord Cromer by Major Matthews, the English officer in command.

"Behind him towered his bodyguard of gigantic Shilluks, none of them under seven feet high, armed with formidable spears and shields, and adorned chiefly with leopard-skins and bangles. Of course these were especially picked for their height, but the rest were very nearly as tall, and were all magnificently built men. The Dinkas also are just as



AFTER THE WAR DANCE, FASHODA.



DINKAS AT LUL.



WAR DANCE OF SHILLUKS, FASHODA.



WAR DANCE OF SHILLUKS AT FASHODA.

finely proportioned, and this array of the warriors of both tribes was a wonderful sight, with their long-bladed spears, heirlooms from father to son, gleaming in the sunshine.

"Headed by Lord Cromer and the Sirdar, we proceeded along the lines of the warriors, received by them in absolute silence: but when we came to the women's lines it was quite a different matter, for here the noise of welcome was simply deafening! The Sudanese women have a cry of welcome all their own: it is a long-drawn high B-flat, which sounds like a shake but isn't, for they make it with their tongues against the roof of their mouths, so that it is a hard repeated vibration, and a most penetrating sound. It is also very difficult to do, for we tried ourselves with absolutely no success! It was



SHILLUKS AT LUL.

accompanied by thumpings on tom-toms made of hollowed-out elephants' feet and on any kind of metallic or wooden object that would make a noise: the din was unspeakable, but most amusing.

"After the inspection came the great war-dance in Lord Cromer's honour round the fetish-tree in the middle of the square. Between four and five hundred warriors took part, and though it lasted over two hours we watched it with breathless interest from beginning to end. It was most dramatic and exciting. A whole battle was acted before us, from the first stealthy advance of scouts, stepping high as through long grass, to the wild *mêlée* at the end, when the two sides met with bloodthirsty war-cries and piercing yells and much blowing of conch shells and buffalo horns, with hootings and whistlings and a general pandemonium. We could have watched them for hours, for each man

fought for himself, and a whole series of elaborate duels took place all round us, each more interesting than the last. Many of the men had their bodies smeared all over with ashes to keep off mosquitoes, and as their faces were generally painted in white stripes, and their hair plastered with the mud and grease of years into every kind of strange coiffure, the effect was absolutely demoniacal. Finally came a solemn dance in which the women joined, jumping heavily up and down, with the usual yells; and then gradually their fervour wore itself out, and one after another took his place again in the ranks round the square to watch the rest of the proceedings, taking a well-earned rest on the ground.

*

*

*

*

*



THE SUDD, SIDE CHANNEL CLOSED.



BELGIAN TROOPS AT LADO.



GRASS FIRES NEAR KHOR ATTAR.



THE SUDD, PAPYRUS AND AMBACH.

"On our return to the steamer, the Mek and several native grandees came down to receive presents in their turn, and the dressing-up that then went on was one of the funniest sights of the day. The Sirdar and the military secretary assisted them by sheer force into their gorgeous robes of honour, cramming the long black arms into sleeves as a rule several sizes too short for them, and tying turbans with more haste than skill. A looking-glass was then pressed into the hand of each honoured guest, and he was despatched like a child at a school-feast, to make room for the next. The sight of rows of black giants sitting gravely on the bank, their turbans having generally come unrolled again, gazing at their own countenances for the first time in their lives, was, to say the least of it, comic. However, the whole thing came to an end at last, and after many polite farewells we steamed off on our way south to the country of the sudd."

* * * * *



DINKAS. AUSTRIAN MISSION, LUL.

"At one point the river widens suddenly into the vast stretch of marshes known as Twenty-five-mile Lake, and as we passed into it one evening at about sunset the effect of absolute desolation was something indescribable, though it had an uncanny picturesqueness of its own. Forest fires blazed on the horizon, throwing up great masses of smoke in front of the setting sun, and obscuring the light though not lessening the heat, which was intense. The water was like a sheet of copper; not a cloud was in the sky, and nothing moved but ourselves and the brown, smoky veils, which came nearer and nearer as we turned and twisted in and out of the clumps

of sudd, following the innumerable windings of the stream.

"Suddenly the sun vanished below the horizon, and we breathed again, for with the darkness came a blessed coolness; and then by the light of the moon we pursued our way silently and at half-speed, the motionless white figure of the 'reis' at the wheel standing out sharply against the sky. The air was alive with fireflies, which mingled indistinguishably with the stream of wood-sparks from the funnel; luckily our other insect torturers preferred the lower deck, with its electric lights, so that here on the upper deck we were left in peace. We moved slowly on, the silence only broken occasionally by a rustle of reeds when our bows touched the wall of papyrus, as we turned a sharp corner. Then suddenly without any warning, a wailing treble laugh pierced the stillness. In that mysterious blue moonlight the sound fairly made our blood run cold—it might have been the spirit of all those who had ever been lost in the sudd rising up to bar our way. With a whirr of

wings and a parting screech a black shape passed between us and the moon, and only then did we know it for a long-necked glossy ibis, an uninteresting-looking bird by daylight, but for those gifted with a taste for melodrama, a terrifying one by night.

"By the afternoon of the fourth day we were practically out of the sudd, and quite glad to see solid bank and ordinary thorn-bushes once more. At Shambé we came across human dwellings again, a dismal malarious place inhabited by Dinkas and Nuers. An unfortunate Egyptian was found here in one of the huts, suffering from a very bad attack of blackwater fever, and was at once removed to the steamer, although Colonel Penton, the medical officer, had but small hopes of saving his life. However, injections of quinine had such a wonderful effect that by the time we reached Mongalla he was almost out of danger, and could be left at the hospital there to pick up strength again. Egyptians as a rule have so little stamina that they go down like ninepins before this fever, and very seldom recover.

"Two days later we arrived at Kiro, the first Belgian station of the Lado Enclave, on the left bank of the river. Lord Cromer's visit was totally unexpected, but the bank was speedily lined with Belgian troops, a most cut-throat-looking set of West Africans and Niams-niams (cannibals); and the officer commanding, who was a Swede, came down to receive us, and was most polite. The whole village was very spick-and-span, the huts forming a well-laid-out street with a 'place' in the centre, and the officers' quarters were surrounded by deep verandahs supported by brick columns and built a couple of feet above the level of the ground, in a futile attempt to circumvent the omnivorous white ants. The men were dressed in very workmanlike blue jumpers and leggings, and looked ready for any amount of fighting; so, as they have free permission to loot the surrounding country to make up to them for getting neither pay nor rations, it is hardly a matter for surprise that the natives have almost entirely deserted that side of the river, and come across to the Sudanese side instead.

* * * * *

"The morning after leaving Kiro (January 20th) we reached our farthest point, Gondokoro, the first post on the Uganda frontier, where we were most hospitably entertained by the two administrators, civilian and military.

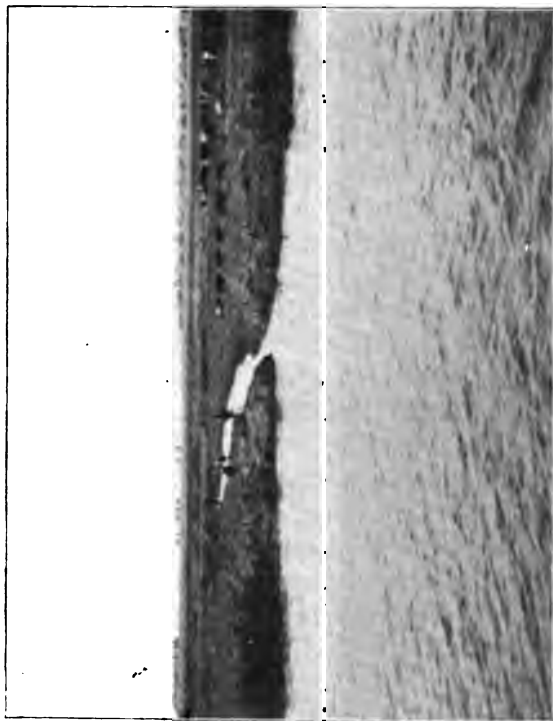
* * * * *

"On our way through the village we passed some beautiful Nuer oxen browsing contentedly in an enclosure: they are about the size of the great Campagna oxen plus a hump, with magnificent horns, and are of the same soft creamy colour. A very fine specimen has lately been brought down to the Cairo Zoo.

* * * * *

"On leaving Gondokoro we turned back northwards, and after a short visit to Lado steamed steadily down-stream, meeting a north wind, which was very refreshing after the sweltering heat of the last few days."

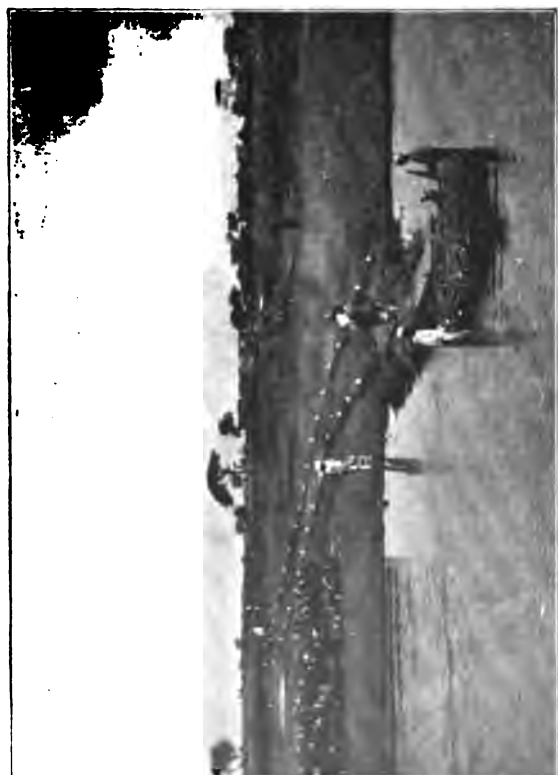
* * * * *



DINKAS TENDING CATTLE NEAR RENK, WHITE NILE.



THE LANDING STAGE AT RENK, WHITE NILE.



THE LANDING STAGE AT RENK, WHITE NILE.



A WOOD STATION, WHITE NILE.

STATIONS ON THE NILE FROM KHARTOUM TO GONDOKORO.

The photographs and narrative of Countess Valda Gleichen taken together have given a brief but brilliant description of the principal points on the Nile from Khartoum to Gondokoro.

But we have still a quantity of admirable photographs of the Upper Niles and their tributaries, supplied by Sir Reginald Wingate to illustrate his Inspections as Governor - General, and many from Sir William Garstin showing his recent travels on the Upper Nile. In order to make these engravings intelligible, it will be necessary to give a list of the principal places along the river where the steamers call.



MAJOR WATSON. SIR RUDOLF SLATIN.
WHITE NILE INSPECTION, 1902.

A list of the stations on the mail steamer route between Omdurman and Gondokoro is appended.

STATIONS ON THE WHITE NILE (BETWEEN OMDURMAN AND LAKE NO).

Geteina, distance from Omdurman	55 miles.
Jebel Arashkol " 	109 "
Duem " 	125 "
Abbas Island " 	163 "
Fasbi Shoya " 	176 "
Goz abu Guma " 	192 "
Abu Zeid " 	208 "
Jebelein " 	238 "
Renk " 	286 "
Jebel Ahmed Agha " 	340 "
Kaka " 	381 "
Demtemma " 	444 "
Fashoda " 	472 "
Taufikia " 	526 "
Sobat River " 	530 "
Bahr el Zeraf " 	561 "
Lake No " 	627 "

STATIONS ON THE BAHR EL JEBEL.

DISTANCES FROM LAKE NO TO GONDOKORO.

Hellet el Nuer, from Lake No 	139 miles.
False Channel (22 miles) from Lake No	143 "
Bahr el Zeraf (south end) " 	249 "
Shambé " 	256 "
Abu Kika " 	293 "
Kenisa " 	304 "
Bor " 	384 "
Latitude 5° 30' " 	448 "
Kiro " 	460 "
Mongalla " 	474 "
Lado (Belgian Enclave) " 	495 "
Gondokoro " 	504 "

From Omdurman to Gondokoro, 1,134 miles.

From Khartoum to Gondokoro, 1,130 miles.

All along the mysterious Nile's course as laid down twenty years ago in our best maps, there were wide districts marked "uninhabited region." The scenes depicted in our photographs show the crowds that turned up almost everywhere the steamer stopped, to welcome the Governor-General's visits. The whole region seems to teem with life, and being now at peace, and the dread of the slave hunter and slave dealer gone for ever, they will increase and multiply, and replenish the earth.

They are at last recognising the dignity of labour and are not ashamed of their industry, for already many of the tribes who never knew how to work, and scarcely understood to till the ground, are settling down to agricultural pursuits and breeding cattle for profit, while the surplus young men seek employment at Khartoum or Omdurman, and in due time many will doubtless migrate to the northern Sudan, whose fertile land will await cultivation as soon as we provide irrigation.

NOTICES OF PLACES VISITED BY THE GOVERNOR-GENERAL IN HIS INSPECTION ALONG
THE WHITE NILE FROM OMDURMAN TO GONDOKORO.

El Geteina is a large, clean village in the Gezira district. It has two separate districts and a good market.

El Dueim is a town of 1,200 inhabitants, chief embarking place for El Obeid. This is becoming an important trade-centre and the principal mart for Kordofan gum.



CAMELS RESTING AT EL DUEIM, WHITE NILE, AFTER TRAVELLING FROM WAD
EL MEDANA, BLUE NILE, ON THE SIRDAR'S INSPECTION OF THE GEZIRA.

Telegraph line terminus. Good Government offices are here.

Kawa, a large village and wooding station for steamers; good market.

Fashi Shoya, camel caravan starting-point for South Kordofan.

Goz abu Guma, Mamuria, telegraph and wood station. Through traffic with Kordofan. Line of villages on high ground.



DINKAS AND SHILLUKS AT RENK.



DINKAS AT RENK, WHITE NILE.



DINKAS AT SHAMBÉ, BAHR EL JEBEL.



NUERS, BAHR EL ZERAF.

Jebelein. River here about 500 yards wide. The two peculiar granite peaks rising abruptly give the name to the place. (Two Mountains.)

Der el Ahamda has good flocks of cattle.

Renk. This is where Kitchener's Expedition caught up the Dervishes on his way to Fashoda, September, 1898. The Dervishes were beaten, their steamers captured.

Jebel Ahmed Agha. A solitary volcanic peak, 250 feet above the plain, is a great landmark.

Kaka is a collection of Shilluk villages spread along several miles of the left bank.



JEBELEIN : WHITE NILE.



SHILLUK CATTLE, NEAR WAU, WHITE NILE.

Demtemma, Dinka and Shilluk villages.

At Melut the Governor-General held an inspection. The telegraph here crosses to the west bank.

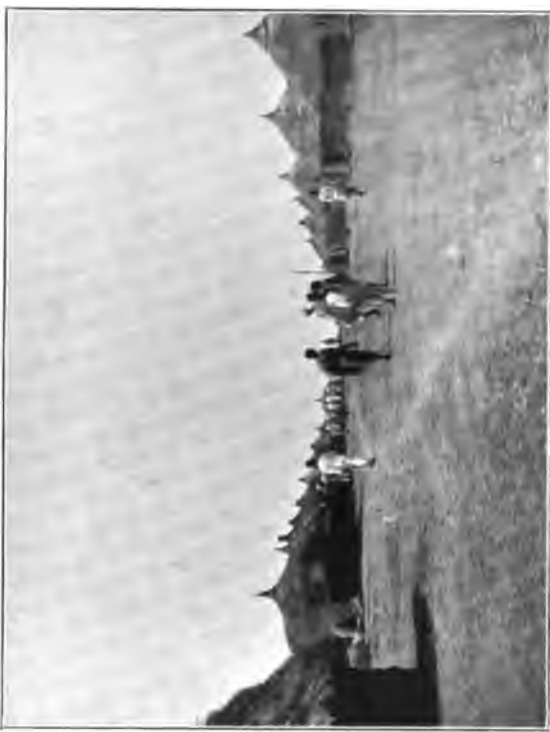
At Kodok there was an inspection of Shilluk warriors, and I give several views of this important place and its bazaar.

Fashoda is not much heard of now, in fact Fashoda is not marked on the latest Government map. Its

place is taken by Kodok not far off, which is healthy, while Fashoda was poisonous from malaria. Since the Marchand business it has lost its importance.



GOVERNOR-GENERAL'S BODY-GUARD, MELUT, WHITE NILE.



THE KODOK BAZAAR, NATIVE QUARTERS.



SHILLUKS DANCING NEAR KAKA, WHITE NILE.



THE KODOK BAZAAR, WHITE NILE.



DER EL AHAMDA CATTLE : NEAR JEBELEIN, WHITE NILE.

During Lord Cromer's visit there were great doings at Fashoda, as shown by Countess Gleichen's photographs. The site of Marchand's garden is pointed out.

At Lul, beyond Fashoda, there is an Austrian Catholic Mission with a tidy settlement, of which Countess Gleichen gives some good photographs,

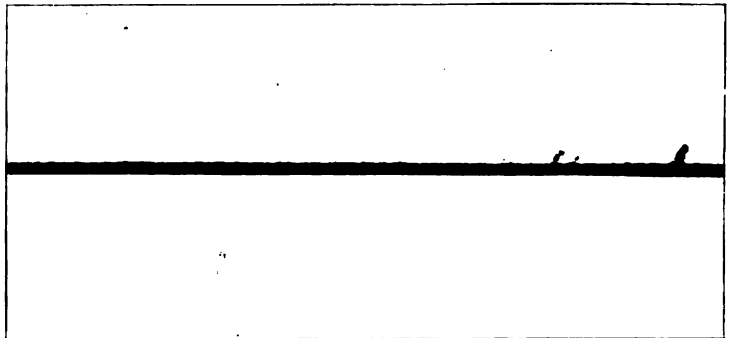
and of the interesting natives, Shilluks and Dinkas.

At Wau, the Sirdar gives us a photograph of the fine flocks of cattle owned by the natives (not to be confounded with Wau in the Bahr el Ghazal).

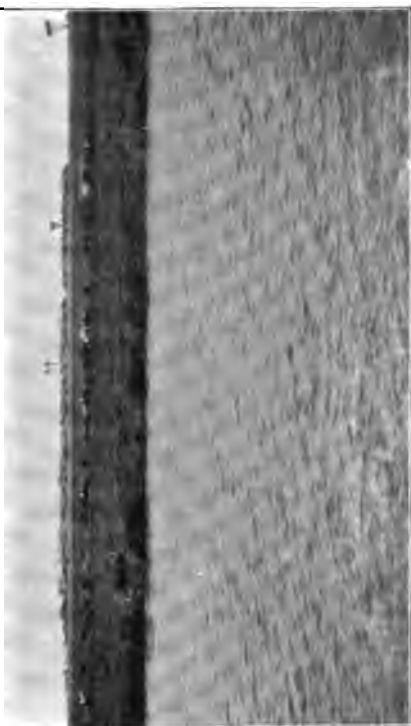
Taufikia, the second place in the district. There are a few troops stationed both here and at Fashoda, but Taufikia is much the more healthy place. Fashoda is one of the worst possible places for a settlement and will be given up.

The Sobat River joins the White Nile a few miles further on. Seven miles up the Sobat is the American Mission School in a grove of Doleib palms. This is a flourishing Shilluk neighbourhood. The American Schools are all admirably managed and there cannot be too many of them; they have benefited Egypt so much. Their pupils are always well-mannered and helpful, and proud of being able to read and write and speak English. Many floating grass islands are met with at this point of the Nile, and grass fires are constantly being seen on the horizon.

It will be more convenient to pursue our journey direct to the south by the main stream of the Nile as far as Gondokoro, devoting subsequently a separate chapter to the Bahr el Ghazal, which flows into Lake No, from the west, and gives its name to an enormous province. The Sobat River, coming from the east, will be best described here. After we have followed the main course of the Nile to the Great Lakes, we shall describe separately the provinces to the east and west of it.



GRASS FIRES : WHITE NILE.



SHILLUK CATTLE, KODOK, WHITE NILE.



SHILLUKS ON WHITE NILE, SOUTH OF FASHODA.



INSPECTION OF SHILLUK WARRIORS, KODOK, WHITE NILE.



SHILLUK CANOE, NEAR KHOR ATTAR, WHITE NILE.

THE AMERICAN MISSION SCHOOLS ON THE SOBAT.

Not very far beyond Taufikia, at Doleib Hill, on the Sobat, this admirable educational body has placed its farthest post on the Nile. It was commenced in March, 1902. Lord Cromer gave them 200 acres of government land to start their enterprise, and they have built an excellent station, consisting of residences, schools, and a church. They are Presbyterians, a Mission Society from a small town in Nebraska, who have been doing good work in Egypt for well nigh half a century. I know their schools in Egypt well, and can speak with confidence of their excellent and successful efforts. Their missionaries are like no others; they are more anxious to teach



AMERICAN SCHOOL ON THE SOBAT RIVER—DOLEIB PALMS.

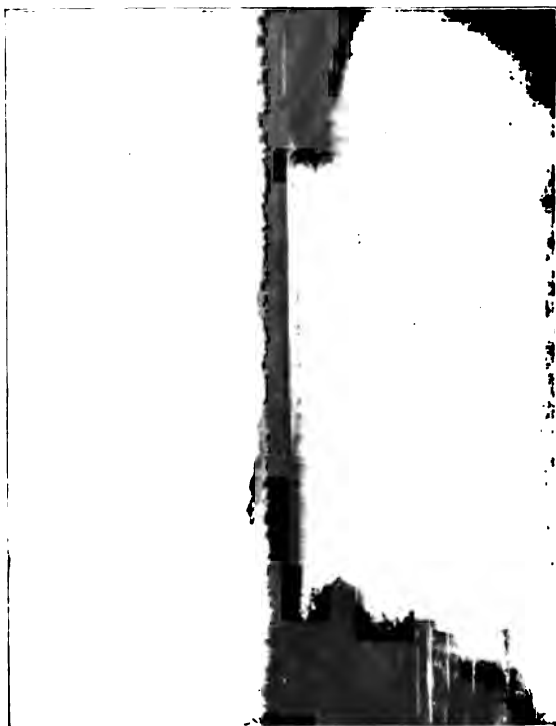
Phipps Bey.

and educate than to proselytize. I measure the results of their labours in Egypt as being next to Lord Cromer's in the good results for the natives. Therefore I hail with joy the beginning of their good deeds to benefit the poor neglected Sudan. I wrote to Dr. Alexander, of their Training College at Assiut, for particulars of this undertaking. He tells me that the school on the Sobat is flourishing. They have a headmaster, an American clergyman, Rev. J. K. Giffen, D.D., and his wife, another clergyman, Rev. J. R. Carson, and his wife, two medical men, who also are teachers, and several native teachers.

In the Government Schools in the Sudan, strange to say, English is not taught. In the schools of the American Mission, everyone speaks, and is taught to read



SIR RUDOLF SLATIN, MAJOR MARKHAM, A.D.C. TO SIRDAR, ON INSPECTION
OF WHITE NILE, 1902.



JEBEL ILLIRI : OPPOSITE MOUTH OF BAHR EL JEBEL.



A HALT IN THE 'SUDD.



A SHILLUK FISHING PARTY.

and write, not only Arabic, but English. Their land is being rapidly brought under cultivation. Dr. Giffen is bringing the finest cotton seed from America, and already fruits and varied crops are reaped. The natives are learning to work and to engage in agricultural and other pursuits of industry.

Lord Cromer in his Report for 1902 says:—

“An opportunity was afforded to me, during my recent tour in the Sudan, of visiting the station established by the American missionaries on the Sobat River. The establishment consists of Mr. and Mrs. Giffen and Dr. and Mrs. McLaughlin. I was greatly pleased with all I saw. The Mission is manifestly conducted on those sound, practical, common sense principles which, indeed, are strongly characteristic of American mission work in



RIVER BARO OR UPPER SOBAT, NEAR ITANG. 8 C. Major Gwynn.

Egypt. No parade is made of religion. . . . Mr. Giffen has very wisely considered that, as a preliminary to the introduction of Christian teaching, his best plan will be to gain some insight into the ideas, manners, and customs of the wild Shilluks amongst whom he lives, to establish in their minds thorough confidence in his intentions, and to inculcate some rudimentary knowledge of the Christian moral code. In these endeavours he appears to have been eminently successful. By kindly and considerate treatment he is allaying those suspicions which are so easily aroused in the minds of savages. I found considerable numbers of Shilluks, men and women, working happily at the brick-kiln which he has established in the extensive and well-cultivated garden attached to the Mission. I may remark incidentally that cotton, apparently of good quality, has already been produced. The houses in which the members of the Mission live have been constructed by Shilluk labour.

THE AMERICAN MISSION SCHOOLS.

I addressed the men present, through an interpreter, and fully satisfied myself that they were happy and contented. They understand that they can now no longer be carried off into slavery, that they will be treated with justice and consideration, and paid for their labour.

“Not only can there be no possible objection to mission work of this description, but I may add that, from whatever point of view the matter is considered, the creation of establishments conducted on the principles adopted by Mr. Giffen and Dr. McLaughlin cannot fail to prove an unmixed benefit to the population amongst whom they live. I understand that the American missionaries contemplate the creation of another mission post higher up the



ITANG VILLAGE, RIVER BARO, SITE OF POST. **S B.** Major Gwynn.

Sobat. It is greatly to be hoped that they will carry out this intention. They may rely on any reasonable encouragement and assistance which it is in the power of the Sudan Government to afford.”

I think these American schools are one of the greatest blessings to the country, and it is pleasant to learn that the good example they have set has aroused similar efforts from England. Lord Cromer and Sir Reginald Wingate have set apart an extensive region on both sides of the Upper Nile for the establishment of schools under the Church Missionary Society of London. This Society is now seeking suitable young men for this work which is to be commenced immediately. Their labours will be industrial, medical, educational, and the teaching of Christian virtues to these poor heathens. The Church Missionary Society has already a number of successful schools in Uganda, and these to be established on the Upper Nile will link with them.

THE SOBAT RIVER.

This important adjunct to the Nile's flood rises in Abyssinia about 500 miles from its confluence with the great river. Near the Nile its banks are hard and firm and with grassy plains, and, further up, its banks in parts are beautifully wooded. Its water is of a reddish-yellow colour. Steamers of $4\frac{1}{2}$ feet draught can ascend as far up stream as Itang from May to December. Different tribes, on its way from its source, give it different names. After the Pibor joins it, it is mostly known as the Baro. Nuers and Dinkas share its banks, the Nuers overpowering the Dinkas, the latter being an inferior race, physically. Anuaks are found further east; their country has well-wooded, park-like



ANUAK GIRLS AT ITANG : TRADING PORT IN UPPER SOBAT. S A. Major Gwynn.

scenery, and it is said there are vast herds of elephants. This will be in the Abyssinian land, beyond where the Pibor joins the boundary of the Sudan. The huts and villages of the Nuers are well built and very populous. They live in a state of nature, nearly all, except the older women, being quite naked. In Major Austin's interesting report he says, "daily a demand for clothes is beginning to rise."

The Anuaks inhabit a portion of Abyssinian territory which is leased to the Sudan Government. Major Austin's description of this region sounds most Arcadian.

"The most fertile tract anywhere. It is well wooded and free from those large swamps found in Nuer territory lower down. There are numerous huts and hamlets, close to the banks overlooking the river. Their huts are scrupulously clean and well

kept, and are surrounded by fences of tall reeds, giving absolute privacy to the occupants. Within the enclosure, in addition to several huts for the family, are the granaries, and other enclosures for the herding of sheep or goats at night. The interior is carefully plastered over with mud and free from dust and dirt. The natives of this region are more advanced in civilisation than any others on the Sobat or Baro. They are a most peaceful, friendly, and industrious race and are great agriculturists. Miles and miles of coast along the river are diligently cultivated twice every year, and bear splendid crops from the generous soil."

These lines are very interesting. Such people may be induced to send emigrants to the rich cotton-lands north of Khartoum, which are now depopulated.

The Gallas over the border are a fine race, and Major Austin thinks the Anuaks learnt their good habits of industry and cleanliness from them. It has been suggested that Gallas might be induced to settle in the northern Sudan, as they are a populous and vigorous race. Major Austin speaks highly of the Anuak females.

"The attire of the younger women and girls is really most attractive. In addition to a numerous accumulation of beads round the neck, they wear a large number of strings of beads round the waist, of many different colours, whilst a small fringe, as it were, of generally white opaque, or light blue and white beads, depends in front and behind, some two or three inches in length, round the body. As the girls are often very beautifully formed and possess pleasant, laughing, and occasionally very pretty faces, a group of them together forms a most charming picture of modest maidenhood."

It is pleasant to happen on such Arcadian life and manners in these remote valleys. The natives evidently have had, for generations, no reason to fear strangers. They have been too remote to suffer from the slave-raiding expeditions which struck terror into the inhabitants of the western regions; so much so that even yet, in many districts, the natives fear the Egyptian soldiers of lighter colour than themselves, mindful of the traditions of slave-hunting days.

Nasser, 160 miles from the junction of the Sobat and the White Nile, is garrisoned by half a battalion of Sudanese under a British officer and is policed effectively as well. The Nuers in this district are shy of civilisation, but their Anuak neighbours may teach them their virtues, now that we protect both, and trade will come in time no doubt.

Large quantities of grain might be sent down the Sobat from the fertile, well cultivated lands of the Anuaks beyond, who are glad to sell flour in exchange for beads, and Major Austin carefully tells the colours and sizes of beads most in vogue, for those who would visit these regions. He says the Gallas will be able to send down gold and iron, ivory and live stock. These clever Gallas are acquainted with the use of money and know the value of Maria Theresa dollars. The Gallas are evidently a people to cultivate, and they now bear a better name than formerly.

There are wide stretches of country along the left bank of the Sobat that are still unexplored. The natives here also generally wear no clothes, except the married women, who have an apron of leather thongs. They are mostly Nuers. The men smear their bodies with wood ashes, which gives them a dirty appearance. They have no guns, and when a big Sheikh got some rifles lately, he broke them up to make bracelets for his ladies. They are armed with spears, shields of buffalo hide, and knob-sticks.

The photographs on pages 214, 215, and 216, all of which are fully described on pages 274 and 275, are from Major Gwynn's collection.



NEAR MONGALLA.

CHAPTER XIII.

THE NILE BEYOND KHARTOUM—PART SECOND.

SIR WILLIAM GARSTIN TO THE RESCUE !



MONGALLA : BAHR EL JEBEL.

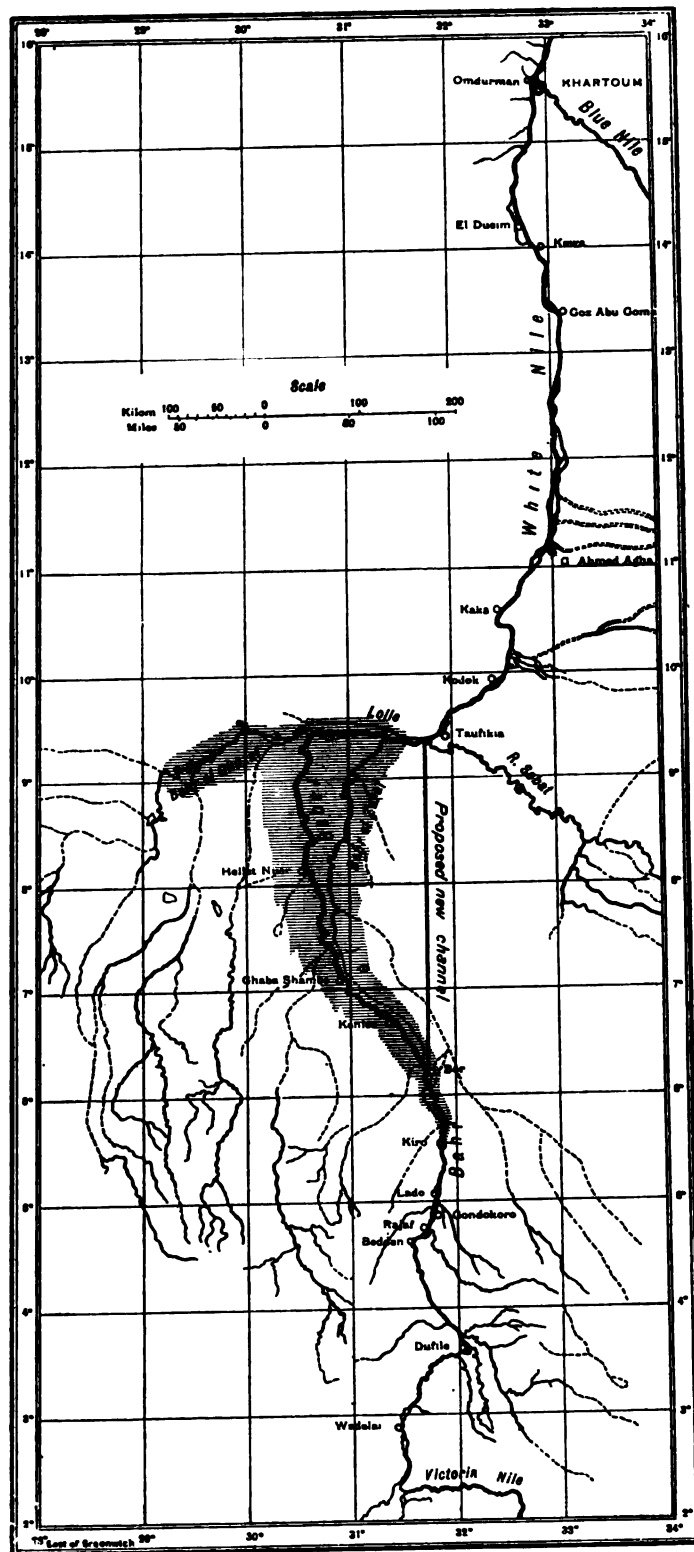
Sir William Garstin.

SIR WILLIAM GARSTIN'S GREAT PROJECT TO AVOID THE SUDD :

LAKE NO, BAHR EL ZERAF, BAHR EL JEBEL, SIR WILLIAM GARSTIN'S NEW CANAL,
THE SUDD REGION, HELLET NUER, SHAMBÉ, KENISA, BOR, KIRO, MONGALLA, LADO,
GONDOKORO, REJAF, LABORE, ALBERT NYANZA, VICTORIA NYANZA.



W. S. Sanborn



SIR WILLIAM GARSTIN'S NEW CANAL, FROM BOR, NORTHWARD.
The Sudd Region is shaded over.

CHAPTER XIII.

SIR WILLIAM GARSTIN'S PROPOSED NILE CANAL FOR COMPLETELY AVOIDING THE SUDD.

THE material relating to a thousand miles of the Nile beyond Khartoum, is too great to compress within the bounds of one chapter, and is therefore given in two sections. A fitting place to divide the narrative will be at Taufikia. Opposite Taufikia, Sir William Garstin's proposed new channel for the Nile, all the way from Bor, would have its outlet. This bold project would entirely avoid the puzzle of the Sudd.

It was no wonder that Sir William Garstin was worried and perplexed for years past to find a remedy for this hateful impediment to all his projects for giving the Nile



THE WHITE NILE, TAUFIKIA.

Sir W. E. Garstin.

fair play for its waters. He seems to me to have at last severed the Gordian knot of this difficulty by this bold *coup*.

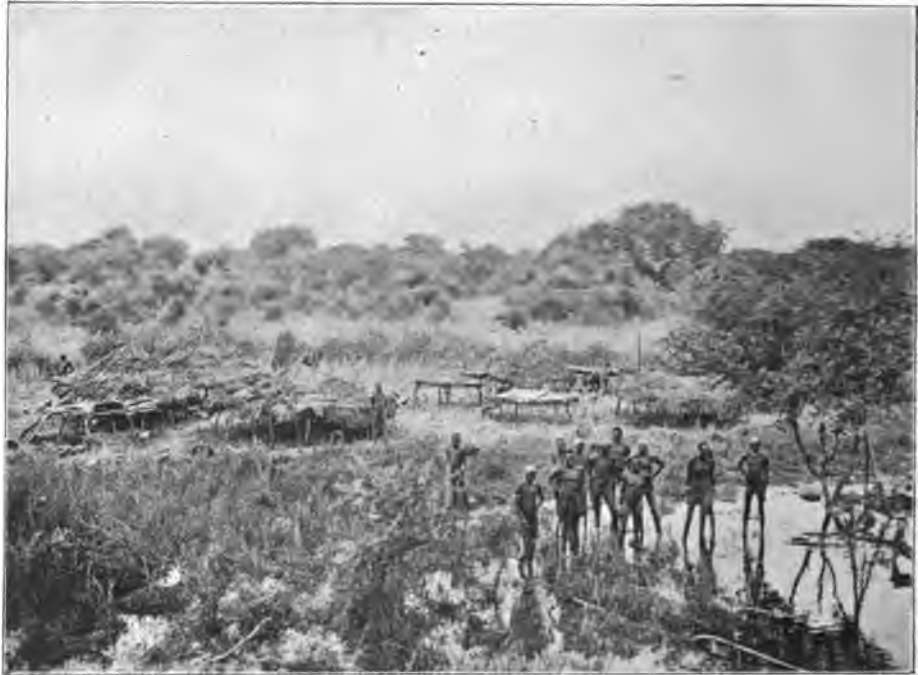
The cut through the sands of Suez, at the other end of Egypt, has revolutionised the world's commerce. But it did poor Egypt harm rather than good. The trade of the world now passes its former emporium and gives her the go-by. Should Sir William Garstin's canal, through another 250 miles of waste, be carried out, it will save Egypt and the Sudan, and restore the wealth of waters which they possessed in

the XIIIth Dynasty, before Sudd was, and when the Equatorial Lakes were larger than they are now, and therefore more free to scour their outlets from any impediment.

Sir William Garstin offers two plans of opening free channels for the Bahr el Jebel.

- (1) By an *entirely new channel* from Bor northwards, at a cost of £5,500,000;
- (2) To re-open and improve the Bahr el Zeraf, at a cost of £3,400,000.

Lord Cromer in his Despatch (Chapter II.) with his usual breadth of view, at once prefers the first named. "I have no hesitation in expressing an opinion, that should this project be found capable of execution, it should be adopted in preference to the other, in spite of the extra cost." But he adds that levels must first be taken, and the matter more fully examined.



BOR : THE BAHR EL JEBEL.

Sir W. E. Garstin.

Sir William thus modestly launches his great scheme for a new Nile Canal. It will be seen that a line drawn through Bor, on the Bahr el Jebel, and running due north, would cut the White Nile at, or near, the point where the Sobat joins this river. "The distance is about 340 kilometres. Were it possible to excavate an entirely new channel, following this line, and to bring down the waters in this manner from Bor, direct to the White Nile, . . . the advantages that would be secured are so great and so obvious as to outweigh almost any objection that would be made." He adds that further knowledge may prove that the scheme is a sheer impossibility, owing to the levels or conformation of the intervening country. All this is now to be inquired into. Lord Cromer has sanctioned the cost of the survey, which will be proceeded with at once.

Sir William Garstin summarises the advantages of the new cut:—the entire avoidance of the swamp region; a saving of 200 kilometres in the transit from Bor to Taufikia; all the cost of sudd-cutting and clearing of channels saved, and a direct current given to the Nile. He would put regulators with locks on his new canal at Bor and another point, and so he would have full control of the discharge of the Upper Nile at all seasons.

But he does not propose to regulate the entire flood of the Nile. He says he only proposes to cut an artificial channel, no larger than one of the existing canals of Egypt. This cut would convey, during the summer, a portion of High Nile flood to the places where it is required. This would completely avoid the great swamps, which we call the Sudd, yet leave them to act as they do at present to absorb the flood water, and supplement the supply in winter. They in fact would hold in reserve the surplus water like a great sponge. From this point of view even the Sudd seems to have its uses of which most of us were unaware.

Supposing the levels and nature of this unknown land, through which the New Garstin Canal must be made, be feasible, there is nothing to prevent a contractor like Sir John Aird undertaking the work, and with modern "steam navvies" executing the whole channel in a very few years.

Should this new canal be a success, it will be a great benefit to the whole Nile Valley, and be a crowning honour to the life labours of Sir William Garstin.



VICTORIA NYANZA : RIPON FALLS : THE SOURCE OF THE NILE.

Sir W. E. Garstin.

In Chapter XII. we have followed the course of the White Nile from Khartoum to the junction of the Sobat. We now resume the account of the Nile's course southward till the Equatorial Lakes are reached.

The BAHR EL ZERAF is the next tributary received by the Nile after the Sobat. This was probably once a main channel of the great river, all the way from Shambé. We are now in the "Sudd" region, and this pest has effaced or blocked up all the ancient channels, so that much of the flood is lost, more than half by evaporation. The inhabitants hereabouts are naked Nuers, but Dinkas now and then are found on the banks. The natives wear the hair long and dyed red. Indeed, long hair for both sexes is a universal Nuer custom. The Nuers extend south



THE BAHR EL ZERAF.

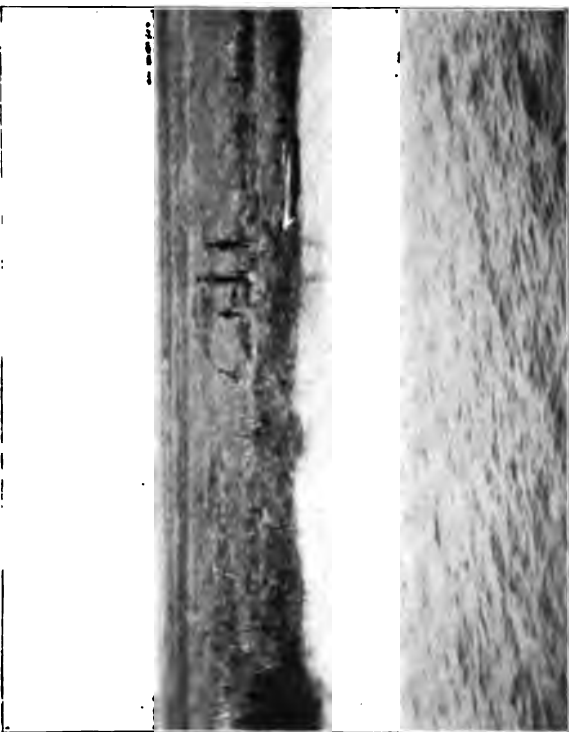
to Kenisa, 250 miles from the Sobat junction. The Bahr el Zeraf being still closed by sudd, is not now used, and traffic has to be carried westward by Lake No. The Nile here turns almost a right angle, to which point it has flowed almost due north from Shambé and Kenisa. This part of the Nile is called the Bahr el Jebel by the natives, after passing Lake No. Beyond this is the worst of the "Sudd" region.

The shallow expanse of water called Lake No is the region where the floods



SHILLUKS FISHING, KHOR ATTAR, WHITE NILE.

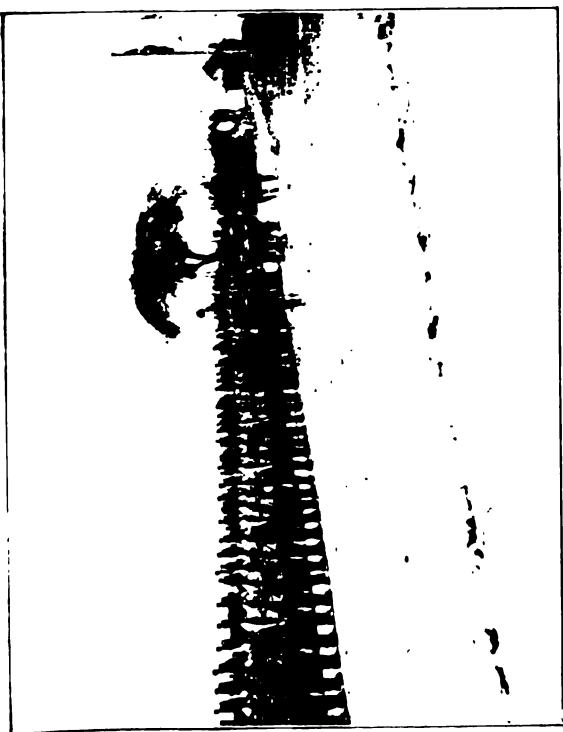
of the Bahr el Zeraf, the Bahr el Ghazal, and the Bahr el Jebel, mingle their waters. We pass Khor Attar and its Shilluk villages, where they seem to be always engaged in fishing, either at the shore or in their canoes. Great grass fires are often found here and



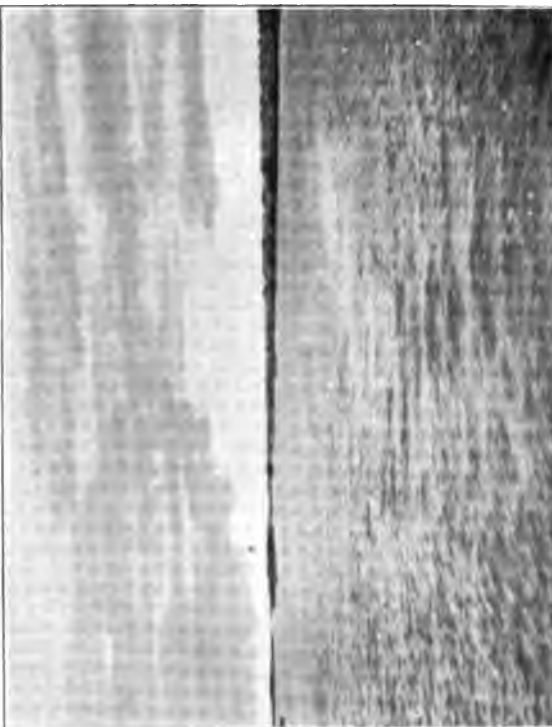
SHILLUK FISHERMEN NEAR TONGA, WHITE NILE.



WHITE NILE : SHILLUK FISHERMEN.



GOV.-GEN'S. INSPECTION OF 10TH SUDANESE AT TAUFKIA, WHITE NILE.



WHITE NILE, NEAR LAKE NO.

OUR SUDAN; ITS PYRAMIDS AND PROGRESS.

in the Tonga district, the grass being burnt to prepare it for grazing purposes. Here the old channel of the Nile, the Bahr el Zeraf, joins the main stream. It is now only



THE BAHR EL GHAZAL.

38 yards broad and 19 feet deep, with little or no current, all blocked up with growths of floating vegetation.

East of this Sir W. Garstin's great scheme for the proposed straight cutting of a new channel for the Bahr el Jebel, from south to north, about 250 miles from Bor to Taufikia, would reach the Nile.



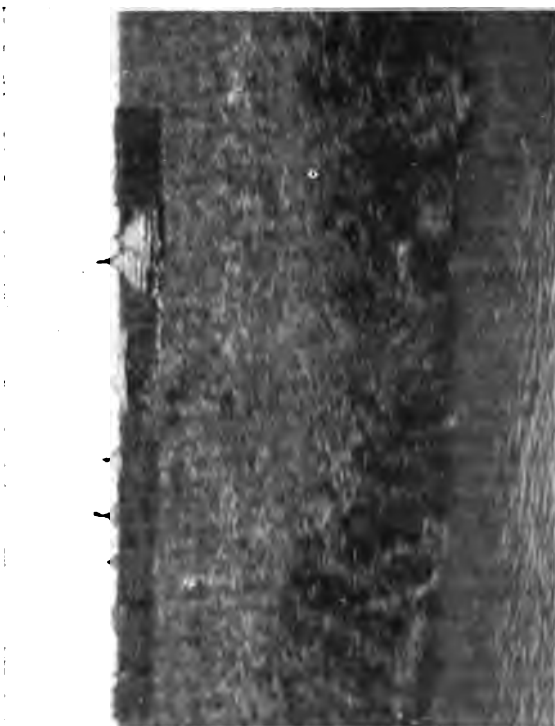
FLOATING SUDD.

Sir W. E. Garstin.

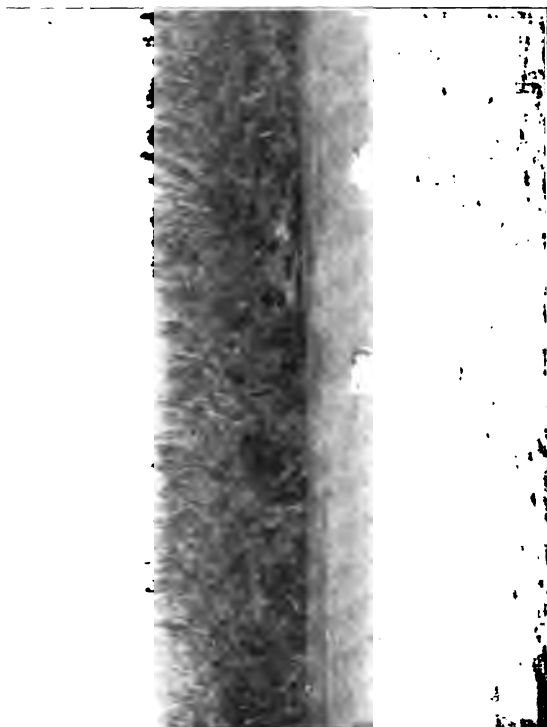
Lake No might have been so called for a joke, for it does not deserve the name of a lake by any means. It is a wide expanse of shallow water, being gradually filled up, and impedes the free progress of the Nile, a gathering receptacle for floating



ON THE BAHR EL JEBEL.



BARI VILLAGE, BAHR EL JEBEL.



SUDD AND AMBACH, BAHR EL JEBEL.



A NATIVE CANOE IN THE SUDD AND AMBACH.

islands of sudd. If Sir W. Garstin's straight cut be found to be possible (all will depend on the survey of the unknown land through which it is proposed to be excavated), it will be a cure for the Nile's greatest stricture.

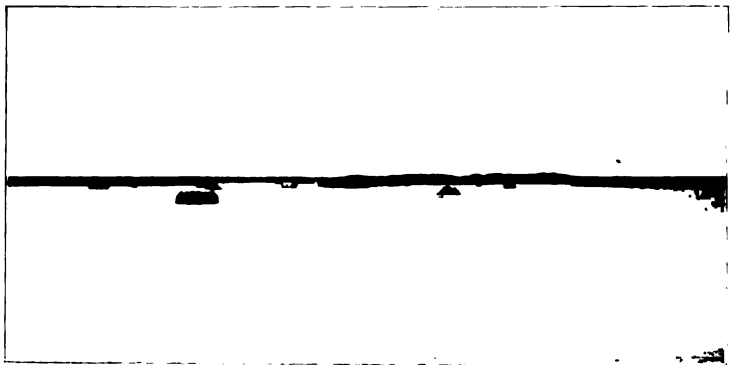


FLOATING SUDD.

Sir W. E. Garstin.

The natives say that the Bahr el Zeraf is actually open to Shambé, but we have no proof of it, and our steamers have to go by way of the Bahr el Jebel, as the White Nile is called by natives, from Lake No southwards to Gondokoro.

The triangular region between these two branches of the Nile is inhabited by a simple, kindly race, the Nuers, much less crafty than the Dinkas. They wear no clothes whatever, and their needs are therefore few. The only trade was in ivory, which now has been made a Government monopoly to save the elephants from extermination. The natives' wealth is in cattle, which they will willingly trade for beads. For purposes of dowry or for fines or dealings of any kind, cattle-values actually form a regular system of exchange.



WHITE NILE. FLOATING SUDD. ISLAND BREAKING OFF.

The Bahr el Ghazal pours its waters into Lake No at the same place where it is joined by the Bahr el Jebel. There are few points of the Bahr el Jebel to be noticed until Shambé is reached. It is all one monotonous waste of sudd production.



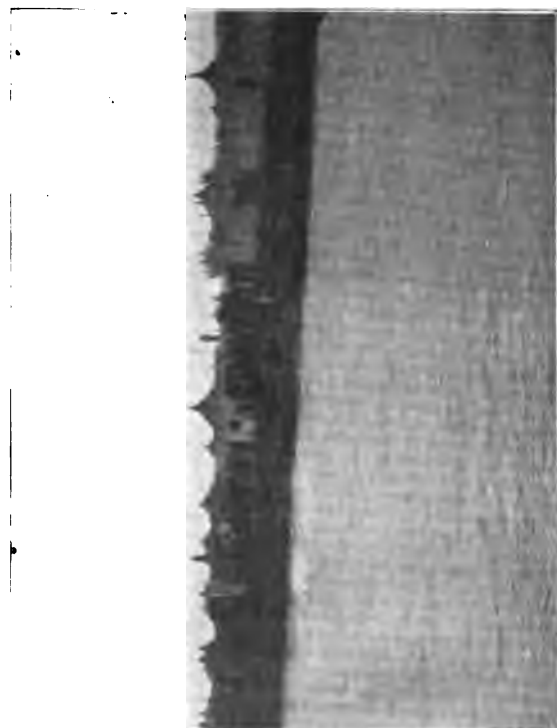
BARI HUT, BAHR EL JEBEL.



BARI HUTS, BAHR EL JEBEL.



SHAMBÉ : GROUP OF DINKAS.



BARI VILLAGE, BAHR EL JEBEL.

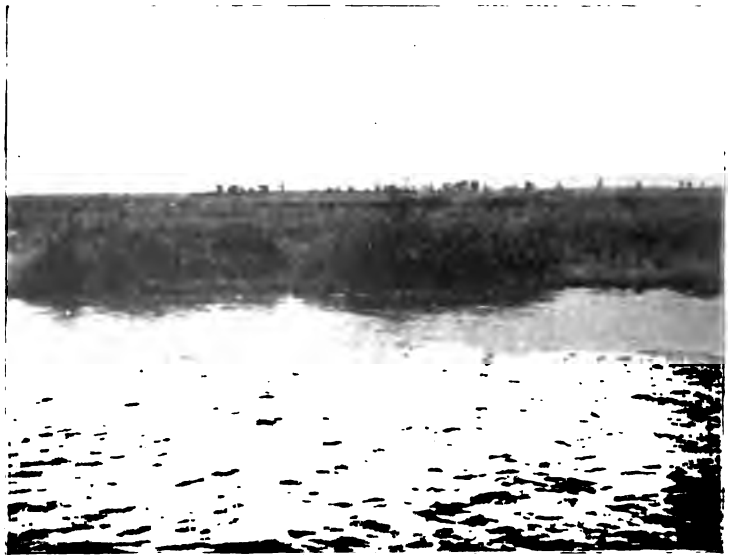
Several pages of photographs are given, showing every stage and every aspect of the Sudd, this vexatious impediment to all the ancient ways of the grand old stream.



NUER FISHING HUTS, BAHR EL JEBEL.

We have no historical record of this pest, whether it is a modern growth, consequent on the gradual curtailment of the Great Central Lake-system of the Dark Continent; we do not know how it originated or when it began. Sir W. Garstin goes into all the suggested causes of the late failures of the Nile. On the whole the floods have come regularly for five or six thousand years.

But the Nile has been occasionally subject to such failures of supply ever since the famine which gave Joseph his chance in governing Egypt, and for thousands of years before his time, as is recorded on the monuments. Egypt has now what it never possessed in antiquity, the full control of the Nile waters for 3,000 miles, and the clever and careful men who now rule the land and its water supplies, may be safely trusted to do everything humanly possible to store up and manipulate what is the very life-blood of this great riverain



HERDS OF DINKA CATTLE, BAHR EL JEBEL.

Empire. The various Reports of Sir W. Garstin during the last five years



THE SUDD, WHITE NILE.



NATIVES AT KENISA, BAHR EL JEBEL.



BARIS IN THE BAHR EL JEBEL.



BARI HUTS, BAHR EL JEBEL.



THE SUDD.

give records of some fifteen blocks of sudd and the channels kept open through them.

At Hellet el Nuer, 165 miles from Lake No, a landing place is reached and is quite a pretty spot in photographs. The plains in this region are evidently never swamped. Then succeed a number of "false" channels and the old direct

bed of the Nile is lost for a time, or at least has not been cleared out or even reached. The water goes zigzagging about, and thus progress is made through a succession of small lakes, till at length, at 165 miles from Lake No, the bed of the true river is reached, and the Nile again becomes a fine open stream of 80 to 90 yards in width, with a high fringe of papyrus at each side.

The false channel leaves the river at an angle of 90 degrees. This corner was blocked by sudd in 1890, but the stuff was light and easily removed. To the east, seven or eight miles away, a belt of palms is seen which not improbably marks the ancient coast of the Bahr el Zeraf. At



DINKA CATTLE. BAHR EL JEBEL.

225 miles from Lake No, is the place which gave such trouble to Major Peake and Lieutenant Drury in 1900.



NATIVES AT KENISA, BAHR EL JEBEL.



KENISA : DINKA MILKSELLERS, BAHR EL JEBEL.



SCRAMBLING FOR MONEY AT KENISA.



KENISA, BAHR EL JEBEL. GROUP OF DINKAS.



BOR.

Sir W. E. Garstin.

Shambé is reached at 256 miles from Lake No. Although Shambé is the chief Nile post for the Bahr el Ghazal province, it is a poor and miserable place for the little garrison. Here the road goes off to Rumbek in the Bahr el Ghazal.

The Nile here twists itself through a marsh of 30 miles. Its depth is 15 feet or so, and its width 50 to 60 yards. For many miles the same dreary scenery prevails. At length this wretched marsh is passed and we arrive at Kenisa (the Church) which derives its name from having been the site of the old Austrian Mission "Heiligen Kreutz." The mission was abandoned in 1865, owing to the deadly effects of the climate.

Another large lagoon succeeds till we come to Bor, 344 miles from Lake No. A string of neat Dinka villages extends to this place all the

way along the east bank, from Bahr el Zeraf. They are cleanly kept and give a pleasant idea of Bor, although it is an unimportant place. The people seem comfortable and



BARI HUTS, BAHR EL JEBEL.



MONGALLA : WHITE NILE.



LADO : WHITE NILE.



KIRO : BELGIAN STATION. NILE.



THE WHITE NILE NEAR MONGALLA.



BARI HUTS AND FISHERMEN, BAHR EL JEBEL.

happy and have large herds of cattle. The land here is 6 to 8 feet above the water and never flooded.

South of Bor the hateful sudd disappears; the marshes are composed of tall, coarse grass. The Bahr el Jebel is now a fine stream 80 or 90 yards wide, with a strong current. This is why Sir W. Garstin has adopted

the idea (which he very honourably states, was not his own, but suggested by Mr. Beresford) of cutting a straight channel due north to avoid all the sudd. If it be found possible when the course is surveyed there is little doubt but it will be made, for the sudd is the cause of all the trouble and outlay of late years on this region, which will be always a plague spot, literally and metaphorically, to the Nile's existence.

After Bor we come into the country of another and inferior race, quite different from the Dinka people—the Bari tribe. These creatures are poor, own no cattle, and keep their dwellings most untidy. They live principally by fishing, but repair to the west bank annually to prepare ground for cultivation.



JEBEL LADO FROM THE WHITE NILE.

The solitary mass of mountain known as Jebel Lado, now appears upon the horizon.



JEBEL LADO, BAHR EL JEBEL.



DINKA CHILDREN SCRAMBLING FOR COPPER COINS, SHAMBÉ.



BARI HUTS, BAHR EL JEBEL.



LADO SHEIKH, IN HIS ROBE OF HONOUR.

The Nile twists about again, and the valley narrows in to six or seven miles; the forest line marks the high ground.

An island is formed at 404 miles, by a bifurcation of the river. These two channels reunite at mile 422; the island is from 800 to 1,000 yards wide. From Bor all the way to Gondokoro, the river becomes a mass of small islands, and no direct river-course can be followed.

At Kiro the old Egyptian station is reached (460 miles) abandoned in 1901. The scenery on the east side becomes beautiful, luxuriant tropical vegetation. Giant euphorbia are a marked feature of the landscape. The whole of the trunks of the trees and most of the banks are covered with a velvety mass of creepers.

A bluff, 10 to 12 feet high, juts out into the stream, but the strong current wears the bank away. The face of the cliff is perforated with countless holes, made by a



KIRO.

Sir W. E. Garstin.

species of bee-eater, a beautiful little bird, with rose-coloured wings and bronze-lined bodies. These add much to the beauty of the scene.

At 460 miles from Lake No, we reach the Belgian station of Kiro, on the western bank. The river is eroding the banks so greatly that the Belgians will have to remove their buildings backwards. Kiro station is well laid out and well built within a brick enclosure, pierced with holes for guns. It is a very picturesque place, and here Lord Cromer and the Governor-General of the Sudan, on recent visits, were most warmly received. There is a Commandant and 65 men; the Commandant's house has a fine thatched roof and verandah. The Belgian soldiers are negroes, but are not natives of this part of Africa. They have stout and squat figures, much tattooed, and are enlisted from the cannibal tribes of the Congo. There is a small steamer, which was carried from the West Coast in sections, and a number of steel boats. Kiro is extremely unhealthy: in two years the Belgians lost 9 Europeans and 300 natives.



VISIT OF GOVERNOR-GENERAL TO GONDOKORO. THE AFRICAN RIFLES.



VILLAGE NEAR MONGALLA : WHITE NILE.



MONGALLA : BAHR EL JEBEL.



MONGALLA : WHITE NILE.

At mile 468 another bifurcation of the river takes place, and afterwards the stream is 200 to 300 yards wide, and so strong the current, that trees at the margins are



MONGALLA.

Sir W. E. Garstin.

constantly being carried away by the falling of the banks. Wood is easily got here for steamers, as the large trees grow down to the water's edge.

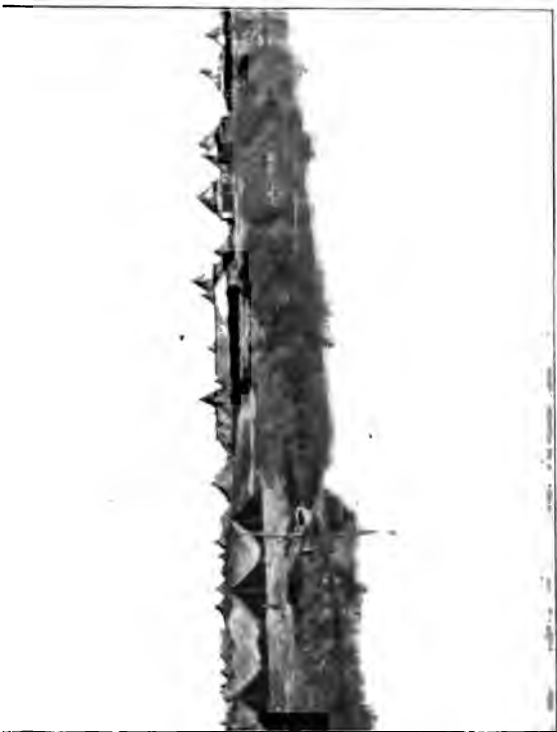
Mongalla, the most southern post of the Sudan Government, is 474 miles from Lake No, on the east bank. It has a garrison of two companies, and has one good boat.



LADO.

Sir W. E. Garstin.

There are about 100 tukh houses. (Tukh houses being made of dry grass, are excellent for the climate, and healthy. They are burnt down and renewed annually.) Mongalla is an open grassy, sandy spot; it was occupied in 1901, and is quite a healthy place, with



LADO : BELGIAN ENCLAVE.



WHITE NILE, NEAR KIRO.



BAHR EL JEBEL : KIRO, BELGIAN STATION.



BETWEEN LADO AND MONGALLA, BAHR EL JEBEL.

plenty of trees and bush. It is a good game country with many elephants, and hippopotami; the latter are often objectionably obtrusive. Brick houses are being built.



LADO, WHITE NILE.

Lt.-Col. Penton.

The Bari are the natives of this region, but are few in number. They are all leaving the Belgian side and building their huts on the eastern shore, under British protection. The supplies for the Belgian troops have to be brought a long distance from the interior.

Lado, 495 miles from Lake No, is the chief Nile post of the Congo Free State, which was formerly Egyptian and the residence of Emin Pasha. The village of the Sheikh of Lado is

on the Sudan side, where he paid his respects to the Governor-General and Lord Cromer.

In front of Lado is a low island, upon which vegetables, bananas, and castor-oil plants are grown. Presents of splendid bananas were brought to Lord Cromer's party as gifts. There seems to be no trade in this district and not much cultivation.

Up stream the scenery improves. Several ranges of irregularly-shaped mountain peaks are seen to the east and south-east.

Jebel Lado still dominates the western landscape, and Jebel Rejaf (a pyramidal and solitary peak, of which Sir William Garstin sent me a beautiful photograph) marks the spot where reefs and rapids begin.

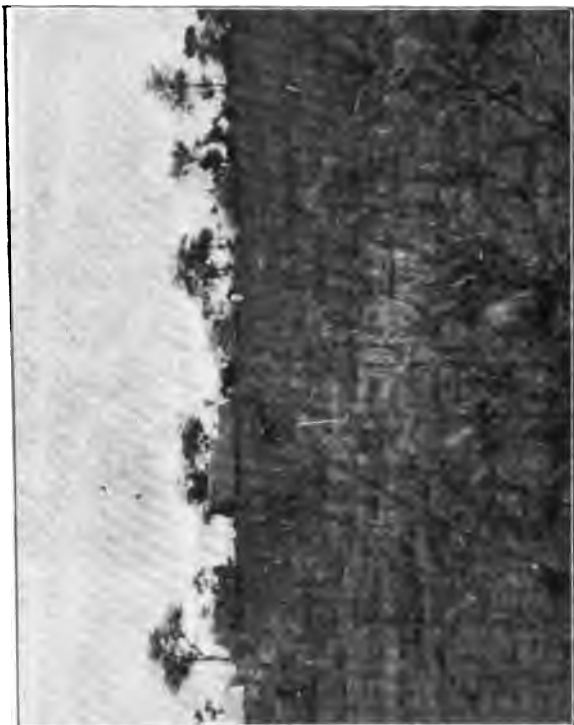
After this, shallows and a maze of channels are met with as we come to Gondokoro,

at 504 miles from Lake No. This place is in the Uganda Protectorate, of which it is the north frontier post. The station was occupied in 1899, and is situated on a cliff about 22 feet above the water. The remains of Baker's old lines are still existing.



BELGIAN TROOPS PRESENTING BANANAS TO LORD CROMER.

Lt.-Col. Penton.



VILLAGE NEAR MONGALLA.



LADO.



MONGALLA CAMP.



MONGALLA.

He had 1,000 men here, but in his day the Bari were a powerful and warlike tribe. There are plenty of trees, bananas, etc., and the station is, on the whole, a pretty one, but large marshes near must make it unhealthy. Herds of wild elephants at times break into the lines. Many Bari villages are here, all on the east side. The Baris seem to be better agriculturists than the Dinkas, Nuers, or Shilluks. They grow *dura*, ground-nuts, beans, and some tobacco.

As we have now left Sudan territory I will merely name any important places between the frontier and the Victoria Lake.

Bedden Island with its rapids, is beyond Rejaf, and there are no more of the (so-called) Cataracts from this point till those on the Shabluka Gorge beyond Khartoum,



REJAF.

Sir W. E. Garstin.

are reached. The island is well wooded, and the limes planted by Emin Pasha still bear fruit. At the old fort of Kiro the Nile flows between two granite hills. On the tops of these hills there are some fine trees. The course of the Nile is much impeded after this by rapids, and the Gougi Falls are very fine. Some of the islands are inhabited, and all are covered with large and fine trees.

More rapids and then Labore, Emin's old fort, is reached. Then the Tolu rapids and cataract extend nearly all the way to Dufle, and completely prevent traffic on the river. Sir W. Garstin says they are more formidable than the Shabluka, or any between this and Assuan. His description of these rapids is very graphic, and the scenery must be magnificent as told in his great Report on the Nile, 1904.



GOV.-GEN. AND HAUT COMMISSAIRE. KIRO, BAHR EL JEBEL.



THE UGANDA RIFLES AT GONDOKORO.
CAPT. OWEN AND THE SIRDAR.



BELGIAN QUARTER GUARD, LADO.



GONDOKORO.

Nimule is the headquarters of the Nile Province of Uganda.

Dufle on the Belgian side has a strong fort with Krupp guns. The river-face is undefended, and, save the fort, all the buildings are neat thatched cottages.

Wadelai (Emin Pasha's old quarters are near) is a British station with an English collector and a European medical officer. It has the reputation of being a healthy place. It is a beautiful part of the river and in the distance the chain of mountains are seen that border the Albert Nyanza.

The river has widened again and looks like a lake. Near the Albert Nyanza Sir W. Garstin would place a regulator for controlling the waters of the lake, the banks being high. But there is no stone for the purpose, unless it be conveyed down the lake.

The waters of the Victoria Nyanza reach Lake Albert by the Victoria Nile, which pours in at the north-eastern corner. Gauges are to be erected here and along the Bahr el Jebel, so as to ascertain the rainfall and the height of the waters



VICTORIA NYANZA, RIPON FALLS : THE SOURCE OF THE NILE.

Sir W. E. Garstin.

of Lake Albert and its outlet at various seasons. Sir W. Garstin states that there is no doubt but that the Albert Lake forms an important reservoir for the Nile supply, how much so is not yet known accurately.

The Albert Lake was discovered by Sir Samuel Baker in 1864, and was at first supposed to be much larger than it is now known to be. However, Sir W. Garstin advises the construction of a regulator, at the point where it joins the Nile, should it be found possible, to use the Albert Lake as a Storage Reservoir.

The course of the Victoria Nile, from the Victoria Nyanza, is well known, but has not all been actually surveyed. The Nile has apparently a troublous time of it, all the way. First it has the great Murchison Falls, three steps of some 50 metres, through a cleft of rock only six metres wide, while immediately above the falls the river is 70 metres in width. Just after it leaves its source in Lake Victoria, the Nile encounters another series of steps known as the Ripon Falls. Between these two great waterfalls,

THE RIPON FALLS—THE VICTORIA NYANZA.

the river expands into two shallow lakes (Lake Choga and Lake Kwania). These are only extensive lagoons, where Sir W. Garstin thinks much of the Nile waters is lost by evaporation. Sir W. Garstin recommends that a regulator be placed at the Ripon Falls, should careful surveys confirm his views, as to the quantity of water to be expected from the Victoria Nyanza. Meantime Nilometers and rain-gauges are to be placed at all important points.

The Victoria Nyanza is the largest sheet of fresh water in the Old World, and its waters are singularly sweet, clear and fresh. The area of the lake is about the same as that of Scotland. It is, in fact, an inland sea, and one side can never be seen from the other. Many rivers flow into it, but its only outlet, the Victoria Nile, emerges from the lake at the Ripon Falls, at the northern end of this vast sheet of water. With all the evaporation from such an enormous area, under an equatorial sunshine, it yet vents by the Ripon Falls, 575 cubic metres per second, or a daily discharge of nearly fifty millions of cubic metres of water. It is no wonder that Sir William Garstin has hopes of obtaining supplies from such a natural reservoir. Records are being kept of the volume of all the rivers which pour into the lake, as well of its discharge.

Sir William Garstin tells us the supposed amount of the water which enters the great lake and how much leaves it by the Victoria Nile. Apparently 87 per cent. is lost by evaporation. Amateur engineers and others have suggested the erection of a weir and regulator at the outlet of the Victoria Nyanza on the Ripon Falls, so as to raise the storage level of the lake. Sir William Garstin, however, as an expert, tells us that, first, it would take $3\frac{1}{2}$ years to raise the lake one metre; and second, that during this process the Nile would be entirely cut off during the whole time.



THE ALBERT NYANZA.



GYASSA ON THE BLUE NILE.

Progress on the Blue and White Niles is shown by the following paragraph in *The Times* as we are going to press :—

“Several important changes in the seats of provincial government in the Sudan are officially notified. Two governorships, termed *mudiriehs*, and corresponding to English shires and French departments, have, with various additions of territory, been created provinces. The Ghezireh *mudirieh* thus becomes the Blue Nile province, with its seat of administration transferred to the populous and flourishing town of Wad Medani. The Senaar *mudirieh* becomes the White Nile province, the capital of which will be Singa.”

CHAPTER XIV.

THE BLUE NILE AND ITS TRIBUTARIES.

MAJOR GWYNN'S SCENES ON THE ABYSSINIAN FRONTIERS.



SIR RUDOLF VON SLATIN, INSPECTOR-GENERAL OF THE SUDAN.

Portrait taken on his return from the Bahr el Ghazal.

THE INSPECTIONS OF THE GOVERNOR-GENERAL, VIZ.—

THE GEZIRA, THE BLUE NILE, THE RAHAD AND DINDER, SENNAR, SINGA, ROSEIRES,
COLONIES OF OLD SOLDIERS, FAMAKA, MAJOR GWYNN'S ILLUSTRATIONS OF THE NATIVES
ON THE ABYSSINIAN FRONTIER.



TELEGRAPH CAMP SERVANTS : MY HOUSEHOLD.



VILLAGE GRAVEYARD, IN UR NILEH.

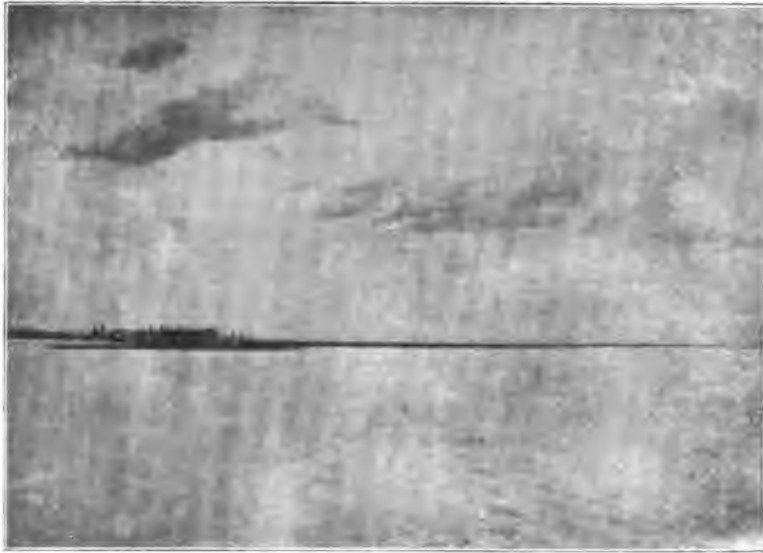


ABU HARAZ.



TELEGRAPH CAMP : MY ESCORT.

CHAPTER XIV.



JUNCTION OF BLUE AND WHITE NILES, KHARTOUM.

THE BLUE NILE AND ITS TRIBUTARIES.

THE White and Blue Niles unite near Khartoum. Khartoum itself is on the Blue Nile. The names of these two streams strike a visitor as most characteristic. The river opposite Khartoum is clear, and, reflecting the sky, is literally blue; at Omdurman, on the other hand, the flood is turbid, and almost milky in colour. After joining, the waters of different hue keep separate, in the centre, for a long way till they gradually intermingle in one turbid flood.

The source of the Blue Nile was discovered by Bruce, in 1770, to be in Lake Tsana in Abyssinia. Sir Samuel Baker roughly surveyed the Atbara, another important Nile tributary rising in Abyssinia, in 1864.

The expedition of Mr. C. E. Dupuis, in 1903, to both rivers, will complete our knowledge as to the southern tributaries of the main stream of the Nile. The Sobat was not fully explored till 1898. The western feeders of the Nile, Bahr el Ghazal, etc., have not yet been accurately mapped, but our knowledge of the White Nile (the Bahr el Jebel) and its tributaries, as far as the Victoria Nyanza, is, thanks to Sir William Garstin's recent labours, nearly perfect.

The entire Nile from Halfa to Khartoum can be ascended by steamers during High Nile. At Low Nile all the cataracts are practically unnavigable. The Blue Nile is navigable for vessels of light draught as far as Roseires when the river is in flood.

The Blue Nile has a south-easterly course from beyond Sennar, which was once a powerful kingdom and a flourishing district. But one hears little of it now. Nothing is left of the old Sennar Kingdom. The Abyssinians had made war

upon Sennar in 1719, but were defeated with great slaughter by Sheikh Emin. The news of this victory spread the fame of Sennar far and wide, and travellers

from Arabia, Egypt and India penetrated to this remote region. But the usual fate of all Mohammedan dynasties befel the conquerors, and after assassinations, revolts and depositions the independence of Sennar came to an end. To this succeeded an anarchy of 30 or 40 years. Mehemet Ali sent an expedition to conquer the country in 1819 under his



RUINS OF OLD SENNAR. *Capt. Sholto Douglas, R.E.*

son Ismail. This expedition reached Khartoum without resistance and then marched on Sennar, which was easily conquered for Egypt. It soon revolted, and Mehemet Ali sent Ismail again into the Sudan to quell the rising. On his way up the Nile

Ismail was treacherously murdered by native chiefs at Shendi in 1822. A succeeding expedition was sent to revenge the murder and the perpetrators were pardoned. On slight cause, however, the pardon was revoked and a general massacre of the inhabitants of Shendi and elsewhere was ruthlessly carried out. The Egyptian name



RUINS OF MOSQUE, SENNAR. *Capt. Sholto Douglas, R.E.*

has been hated ever since along the Upper Nile, although the whole Sudan was formally annexed to Egypt, in 1839, by Mehemet Ali. He had gone himself to complete the



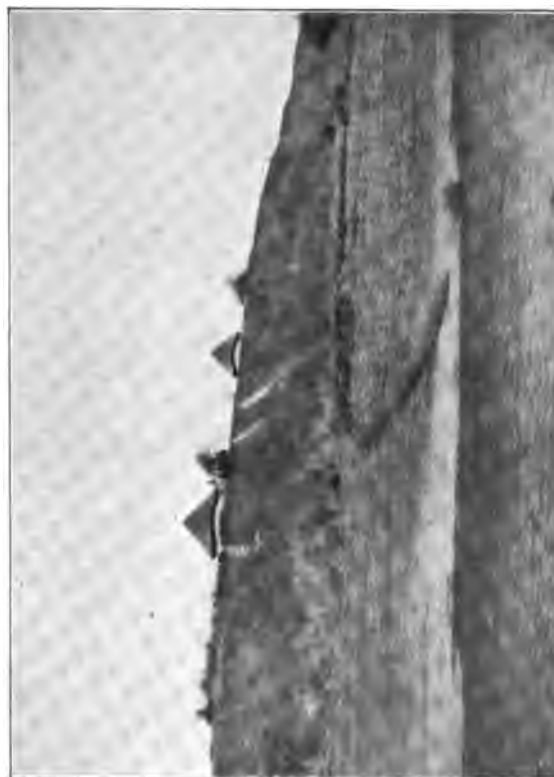
BLUE NILE NEAR KAMLIN.



THE BROTHERS ABU SIN, SHEIKHS OF RUFAA.



DANCING A ZIKR, BISHAGRA, NEAR KAMLIN.



REST-HOUSES NEAR ARBUGGI, NEAR KAMLIN.

conquest of Sennar, Fazokl, and Kordofan, having heard reports of the gold mines and riches of ivory, gum, etc., in these regions. These were not found to exist, and



STONE BOATS : BLUE NILE.

the only result of many military expeditions was the founding of Khartoum as a central mart for a huge slave trade, on a scale hitherto unknown. So the chivalrous civilisation that had been proclaimed to the world by Mehemet Ali only brought misery and rapine to the Sudan. The blacks were carried off by thousands to swell the Egyptian armies, a state of affairs

that was only terminated in our own day. It was also necessary to keep large forces all over the Sudan to collect the taxes, and the country was bled to death.

The Blue Nile now comes again to the front as a factor in the irrigation of the Sudan and, perhaps, for Egypt, as a possible sustainer of the great Nile's flood. As it rises in Abyssinia, we have concluded a treaty with King Menelek, giving us rights over its waters. Perhaps Lake Tsana may some day be stored up and made to form a vast reservoir to impound the copious rains of this region, whose rainy season has never wholly failed.



THE GOVERNOR-GENERAL'S STEAMER ON BLUE NILE.

The Blue Nile has many feeders, the Rahad, the Dinder, and others, and itself bears many names according to the various tribes on its banks. The main stream rises



A RAFT ON THE BLUE NILE.



A RAFT ON THE BLUE NILE.



A RAFT ON THE BLUE NILE.



A NATIVE BOAT CARRYING MERCHANDISE, BLUE NILE.

about 60 miles south of Lake Tsana, and flows through that lake (which is 1,800 feet above the sea) for 500 miles to Famaka in the Sudan. Famaka is in a plateau 2,000 feet above the sea.



PRESENTING ARMS TO GOVERNOR-GENERAL'S STEAMER. BLUE NILE.

The Abyssinians anciently believed the Blue Nile was the source of the Nile, and they used to threaten to divert its course when they wished to show their power over Egypt. This fiction found some belief in Egypt; the Arabian historians tell us that about 1150 A.D., when the Nile flood failed to

come, an embassy was sent to the Emperor of Ethiopia, praying him to free the Nile waters, and at once he complied, and the life-giving High Nile returned to its ordinary good behaviour. He may have cut the sudd on the White Nile.

The length of the Blue Nile in the Sudan, from Famaka to Khartoum, is about 900 miles. The Blue Nile was but a poor stream when I saw it in March, though its wide dry banks



BOAT-BUILDING ON THE BLUE NILE.

showed what it could be in time of flood. Mr. Dupuis considers that its winter supply can be greatly aided by judicious irrigation schemes. It is a splendid stream



THE BLUE NILE AT ROSEIRES.



ROSEIRES : AWAITING THE GOVERNOR-GENERAL'S VISIT.



ZIKR AT A VILLAGE ON BLUE NILE.



BANKS OF BLUE NILE, NEAR ROSEIRES.

in the months of July and August. Steamers ascend to Roseires, 300 miles above Khartoum, when the Nile is high, without difficulty. The flood comes between



JUNCTION OF BLUE NILE WITH RAHAD.

1st July and 1st November. Above Roseires there are rapids, the natives carrying on trade on the river by means of rafts, ingeniously manipulated. The months of December, January and February are cool and healthy. March, April and May are hot. The rainy season begins in May and lasts till October. August, September and October are very

hot and damp. After the rain, malarial fever is prevalent. September and October are the worst months.

The abundance of mosquitos is no doubt the cause of this, and the Government must adopt the modern means of lessening both grievances.

Pictures, in some cases, speak more eloquently than words, and I will not weary my readers with many further remarks, merely giving enough to explain the photo-



JUNCTION OF RIVER DINDER WITH BLUE NILE.

graphs which the Governor-General (Sir Reginald Wingate) has placed at my disposal.



WAD EL ABBAS, BLUE NILE.



KARKAJ, BLUE NILE.



FORESHORE NEAR WAD EL ABBAS, BLUE NILE.



AWAITING THE STEAMER AT WAD EL ABBAS, BLUE NILE.

THE GOVERNOR-GENERAL'S INSPECTION OF THE GEZIRA PROVINCE.

The tongue of land lying between the White and Blue Niles is called the Gezira. A peninsula is always by the natives called "an island"—gezira. It contains about 7,500 acres. Many of the inhabitants are gathered in villages or towns on the two Niles, but there are flourishing places inland, such as Managil, Abud, and others, which are supplied with water by deep wells, and so saved from drought.

The Governor-General's inspection of the Gezira was made by means of camel and donkey transit. That of the Blue Nile by steamer. The two trips are combined in this chapter. Both of them were pioneer visits of the Sirdar.

Kamlin, on the Blue Nile, 65 miles from Khartoum, is the Mudiria of Gezira. There are post and telegraph offices. There is a large mixed population, industrious

and peaceful, who turned out to welcome the Sirdar.

Managil is a collection of a number of villages in the central part of the Gezira. It is 38 miles from Wad Medani, 50 from Duem on the White Nile, and 107 from Khartoum.



GEZIRA WOMEN DANCING AT ABUD.

The wells of Managil are 150 feet deep. There is a large mixed population and this region, with Abud Merkaz, has 43,000 inhabitants. The land just south of Managil is admirably suited for the cultivation of cotton. The Khalifa had imported blacks for the cotton culture, and a number of them have settled there and understand this crop. This region came within the Governor-General's inspection, and the genial Sirdar and his suite received an ovation from the inhabitants everywhere they went. The expedition was by camels with camping outfit, from Khartoum, round the peninsula and across from the Blue Nile to the White Nile.

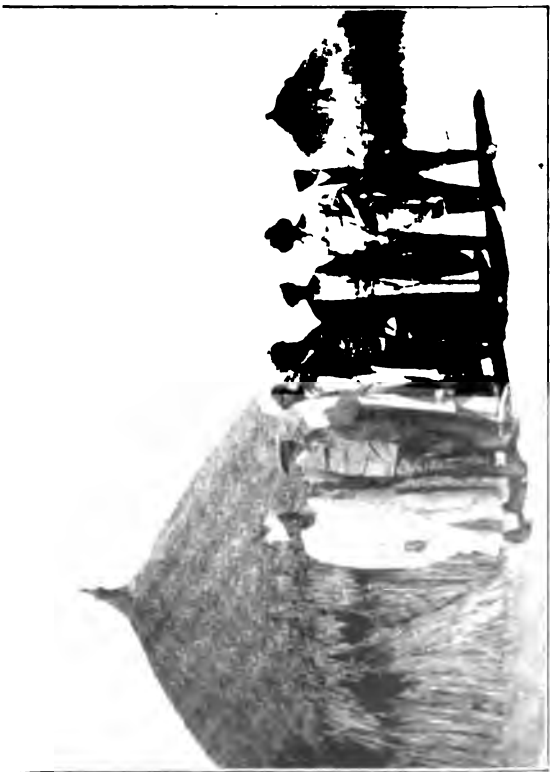
Wad Medani, with a population of nearly 10,000, is on the Blue Nile, and is a good market town, the largest in the Sudan, next to Omdurman. It has post and telegraph offices. It is the headquarters of the Sennar Mudiria, and has one battalion for garrison. It has a settled mixed population. The town is a mile long by half a mile broad, and has an imposing effect.



GOVERNOR-GENERAL SHAKING HANDS WITH SHEIKHS.



GEZIRA : THE SHEIKH OF ABUD.



GEZIRA : STAFF AND GUIDES, GOVERNOR-GENERAL'S JOURNEY.



GEZIRA : WOMEN DANCING.



MANAGIL, GEZIRA : NATIVES AWAITING GOVERNOR-GENERAL.

The Gezira has many good villages on both Niles, but we shall find several of them described in the trips to the Blue and White Niles, and the Rahad.

Lord Cromer has recommended the making of a railway to El Medani from Khartoum which would facilitate communications.

INSPECTION OF TOWNS AND VILLAGES ALONG THE BLUE NILE.

After passing Kamlin we come to Rufaa, visited by the Governor-General recently. The district is ruled by its native sheikhs; the inhabitants are nomadic and trek northwards before the rainy season with their cattle, camels and horses. A nucleus remains behind to cultivate cotton for local consumption.

The country lying between the Blue Nile, Rahad and Dinder Rivers is at present almost uninhabited. In the days before the Mahdi, villages extended along these rivers to the Abyssinian frontier. The inhabitants are slowly returning, but there are few villages to be found over this once populous region.

Much of the land is well fitted for growing cotton, and when the promised survey of this region (with regard to irrigation and the storing of these fine rivers' flood) is carried out, no doubt its importance will be realised and developed under the peaceful rule it now



BANKS OF BLUE NILE, NEAR SINGA.



GEZIRA : MARKET DAY AT MANAGIL.



GEZIRA : SNAPSHOT AT EL IUFR.



GEZIRA : PREPARING TO START FOR MANAGIL



GEZIRA : MARKET DAY AT MANAGIL.

enjoys, and the people will settle down to agricultural work, or industrious emigrants from Abyssinia may be induced to settle here.

THE RAHAD AND THE DINDER.

The Rahad is often, when its waters are high, a very picturesque river, as the engravings truthfully depict; it rises in Abyssinia near Lake Tsana, and joins the Blue Nile opposite Wad Medani.

The Dinder falls in higher up, and is navigable for 70 miles when the flood is high. It also rises in Abyssinia and flows through a very mountainous country. It afterwards flows 200 miles through the Sudan. The banks of the lower Dinder once produced plenty of cotton, but there are now no inhabitants to grow any crops.



GENERAL SIR LESLIE RUNDLE.

At the village of Wad el Abbas on the Blue Nile, there are about 1,800 Jaalins and Sudanese. There is a weekly market and the population is increasing.

Sennar unfortunately has quite lost its ancient glory, but still a good town may yet arise from the ruins of the hateful Dervish occupation. At the time of the conquest of the country by the British in 1899 the town was found quite uninhabited. It was made the headquarters of the district till, in 1900, the Mudiria was removed to Wad el Medani. In March, 1903, however, the headquarters of the Mudiria were removed to a new site at Kabush, south of Sennar, on the river, where the Government are erecting new buildings in a more healthy place and hope to induce the people to migrate to them as soon as completed.

The surrounding district has fertile soil, and land well cultivated by rain-water supplies. Sennar also has wells for cultivating, which are provided with Sakias.

Singa is becoming an important place. The soil is fertile and the district is well wooded. The trade is increasing and there is a daily market, post office and telegraph. The turnout of a loyal populace to welcome the Governor-General is well shown in his photographs. The inhabitants are mostly of the ever-loyal Jaalin tribe. The



BANKS OF BLUE NILE, NEAR KARKAJ



GOVERNOR-GENERAL LANDING AT KARKAJ, BLUE NILE.



NILE STEAMER AT KARKAJ, BLUE NILE. PAYING A SALUTE.



BANKS OF THE BLUE NILE, NEAR KARKAJ.



COLONEL FERGUSSON, LATE ADJUTANT-GENERAL
EGYPTIAN ARMY, NOW GRENADIER GUARDS.

the 10th Sudanese, and some scallywags (Friendlies). The 10th Sudanese had 150 killed and wounded, and lost seven officers. It was, as one of the British officers told me, quite the best little fight he ever saw in the Sudan. Generals Hunter and Rundle had left the Blue Nile country before this. Colonel Lewis heard that Ahmed Fedil was coming from Gedaref with an army to join the Khalifa, and intercepted and completely smashed him with his small force. Colonel Fergusson was badly wounded in this affair.

Gorringe Bey is now Governor of Sennar. After showing great architectural skill in the design of the Palace at Khartoum, Colonel Gorringe Bey was "promoted" to the post of Mudir of this province. His great taste for

Sennar Mudiria moves here from January to April. Karkaj has upwards of 1,000 inhabitants and a good market.

Roseires is the residence of a British inspector and Mamur (governor). It rejoices in a telegraph and post office, and has a ferry across the Blue Nile. A garrison with a gunboat and a British officer gives the place an air of importance. But it is as yet a poor place for supplies.

Roseires possesses memories of the gallant fight of the handful of Egyptian soldiers under Colonel Lewis, who bravely attacked Ahmet Fedil and his host of Dervishes and put them to rout, with 800 dead and 2,000 prisoners, the leader and a few hundred only escaping. Most of the fugitives surrendered subsequently at the White Nile. Their object was to cross both Niles and join the Khalifa at Kordofan. This was on the 26th December, 1898, and was a brilliant affair. We had only four white men, 400 of



ROSEIRES, BLUE NILE.

Lieut.-Col. Penton.



THE GOVERNOR-GENERAL'S INSPECTION OF SENNAR.



RANKS OF BLUE NILE, NEAR ABDIN.



GOVERNOR-GENERAL'S INSPECTION AT SENNAR, BLUE NILE.



THE GOVERNOR-GENERAL'S INSPECTION OF SENNAR.

practical architecture will not, I am afraid, find much scope in this region. In the author's opinion the Palace at Khartoum is one of the most beautiful of modern structures, and it is said Gorringe Bey also designed most of the new public buildings in Khartoum, the Gordon College among the rest. If so Gorringe Bey is an architectural genius, quite a rare thing in these days.

There are most interesting colonies of discharged Sudanese soldiers on the Blue Nile, which were visited by the Governor-General. These are flourishing stations of respectable, civilised men, who have seen the progress under the British in Egypt, and are well trained to order and discipline. They and their wives and children may become actual pioneers of industry.

As similar colonies have done well in the districts of the Punjab and other newly developed irrigation centres in India, so great things may be expected from a similar class of men when settled along the Blue Nile, especially when this rich region obtains the benefits of irrigation foreshadowed in the Report of Mr. Dupuis's recent visit.



FETISH-TREE IN VILLAGE OF THE SUDANESE COLONISTS.

One thing, however, may be noticed in the photograph of the Fetish-tree at the Military Colony. These poor souls have not had the benefit of Christian teaching. Were the excellent American Mission to establish its schools in this region, they would soon discard fetishism, and in addition, there would be some chance of their being taught the English language, which is not done by the Education Department of the Anglo-Egyptian Sudan; only Arabic, I am told, being taught in the Government schools. Now Arabic is not the only language of the Sudan peoples. Few of them, in remote regions like this, speak Arabic.

Mr. Dupuis in his recent Report gives valuable suggestions for the development of the Gezira and Blue Nile region by means of irrigation. As a full review of this talented engineer's recent expedition to the sources of the Blue Nile will be found hereafter, the reader is referred to the chapter devoted to it for his suggestions on the future benefits to be derived from irrigation.

Captain Sholto Douglas, R.E., kindly contributes some photographs taken when he



DISTRIBUTION OF ALMS TO THE POOR, BLUE NILE.



HILLET TISAGI : COLONY OF OLD SOLDIERS, BLUE NILE.



CHIEF OF COLONY OF DISCHARGED SOLDIERS AT HILLET TISAGI, BLUE NILE.



COLONY OF OLD SUDANESE SOLDIERS, BLUE NILE.



MARKET, GIDAMI.—TYPES OF GALLAS. 5 C. Major Gwynn.

was employed on the adventurous task of laying the first telegraph, in 1899, along the Blue Nile from Khartoum to Roseires. The illustrations of the ruins of old Sennar are also from his album.

Major Gwynn, D.S.O., sent me a remarkable series of photographs taken in the course of his expeditions to settle the frontiers of Abyssinia. He was engaged at this arduous task for several years. They represent peoples and scenery never before illustrated. Major Gwynn intended me to mix them up with those of others from similar localities, but they actually form a volume of themselves, and should be kept together as far as possible. They range from the sources of the Abyssinian rivers to Gedaref, Kassala, and Suakin on the east, Famaka on the south, to the Sobat on the west. The boundaries as laid down by Major Gwynn have become the accepted lines of demarcation between us and our good friends the Abyssinians. His photographs are fittingly introduced as an appendix to Chapter XIV.

It was not possible to arrange the photographs according to Major Gwynn's list, to which the numbers refer, owing to their different sizes.



GALLABAT FROM THE FORT. 18 A. Major Gwynn.



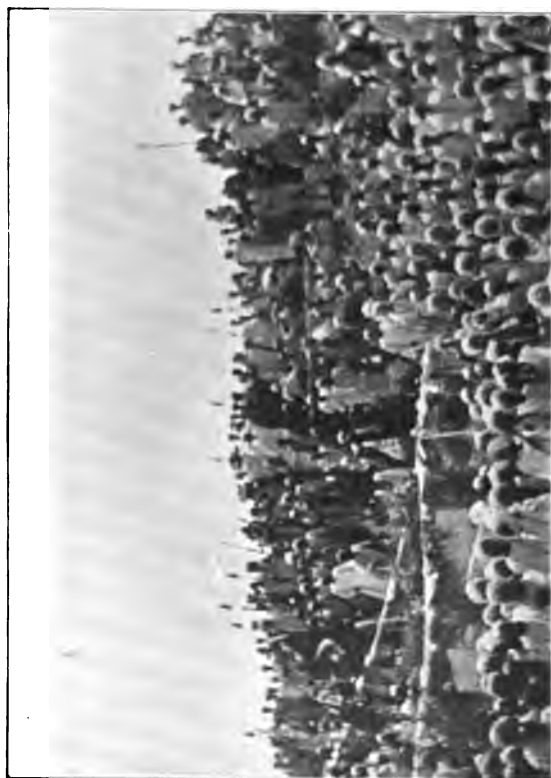
GOVERNOR-GENERAL LANDING AT SINGA, BLUE NILE.



GOVERNOR-GENERAL'S INSPECTION, SINGA, BLUE NILE.



CROCODILE SHOT ON BLUE NILE, NEAR SINGA.



GOVERNOR-GENERAL'S INSPECTION AT SINGA, BLUE NILE.



JEBEL MENZA, BLUE NILE, NEAR ABU RAMLA. 1 C.



JEBEL METONGWA, ABU RAMLA, THE BLUE NILE. 1 D.

DESCRIPTION OF MAJOR GWYNN'S PHOTOGRAPHS.

Each of the photographs bears the numbers referring to Major Gwynn's List.

1 A, 1 B, 1 C, 1 D. Houses of Gunig hill dwellers on right bank of the Blue Nile near the frontier (near Abu Ramla). The villages are near the top of rocky hills, about 1,000 feet elevation. The houses seen on top of the rocks are 900 feet above the plain.

1 C represents a hill about 1,000 feet above the level of the plain and the village is about four-fifths way up. 1 D. The hill on top of which are the houses A and B are about 900 feet above the plain.

2. Stream near Goba in the Beni Shangul plateau, 5,000 feet above the plain.

3 A and B. Yabus stream which flows from this plateau towards the White Nile. It is reputed to lose itself in a marshy district on N. bank of the Sobat, and is the only perennial stream between the Blue Nile and the Sobat.

4 A and B. Mahomet wad Hojali (brother of Tur el Guri), the most powerful chief in Beni Shangul, who was overthrown and made prisoner by the Abyssinians; he is still a prisoner. (This man with the Abyssinian title of Fitaaurari, acts as Wakil.) Has been a notable slave raider with Wad Mahmud, who was captured by Gorringe Bey this year (1904). His followers are Arabs descended from merchants who have settled in this country.

5 A. "Womber" Yembo, steward to Dejj Joti, the Galla ruler of the frontier district at the watershed of the two Yabus streams and Sobat, which is a plateau 5,000 feet to 7,000 feet. The Italian Bottego Expedition was cut up at the spot.

5 B, 5 C, 5 D, 5 E. Types of Gallas.

6. Nuers, Sobat, and dead hippopotamus.

7 A. Buruns of the plain between Fashoda and the Abyssinian frontier. They are quite naked, covered with red mud and armed with long bows. Tame ostrich plucked.

MAJOR GWYNN'S PHOTOGRAPHS.

Each of the photographs bears the numbers referring to Major Gwynn's List.

7 B. Type of Burun villages.

8 A. Anuak girls at Itang, trading post on Upper Sobat.

(This beautiful photograph illustrates Major Austin's description of interesting people. It has been borrowed to insert in Chapter XII. when describing that region.)

8 B. Itang village, site of post (will be found in Chapter XII.)

8 c. River Baro, or Upper Sobat, near Itang, will be found in Chapter XII.

9 A and B. Dinka boys of Sobat (Uryong).

10 A and B. River Dinder in flood near Dunkur, Abyssinia. (Fording the stream.)

11. River Atbara near Gallabat.

12. Gyassa on Blue Nile between Sennar and Roseires in month of December.

13. Blue Nile where it crosses frontier above Famaka, looking east.

14. Jebel Keili, south of Roseires, about 2,000 feet above the plain. Type of isolated rocky hill of the district.

15 A and B. Bamboo jungle south of Kirin, Abyssinia, slopes of Beni Shangul plateau.

16. Hamid Wakil of Hojali wad Hassan, Mek of Assosa, who captured and gave up Wad Mahmud to Gorringe Bey. The bearded man rebelled against Hamid and joined Mahmud. These photos were taken in 1900.

17. Native bridge across Yabus stream.

18 A and B. Gallabat from the fort, looking over the battlefield. The higher hill on the left is the spot where King John of Abyssinia was killed.

19. River Pibor.

20. Shilluks at Fashoda. (See Chap. VIII.)

21. Drawing water at west of Suakin.

22. Jebel Kassala in the distance. The near hill is Jebel Mokran.

23. Flocks by the River Atbara, about 20 miles above the battlefield.



GIDAMI, ARYSSINIA. TYPES OF GALLAS. 5 B.



HAMID WAKIL OF HOJALI, WHO CAPTURED MAHMUD. 16.
275



BAMBOO JUNGLE, SOUTH OF KIRIN, ABYSSINIAN FRONTIER. 15 A.



STEEP MOUNTAIN IN FOREGROUND THE GREAT BLUE CYPRESS, RUHAN. 20



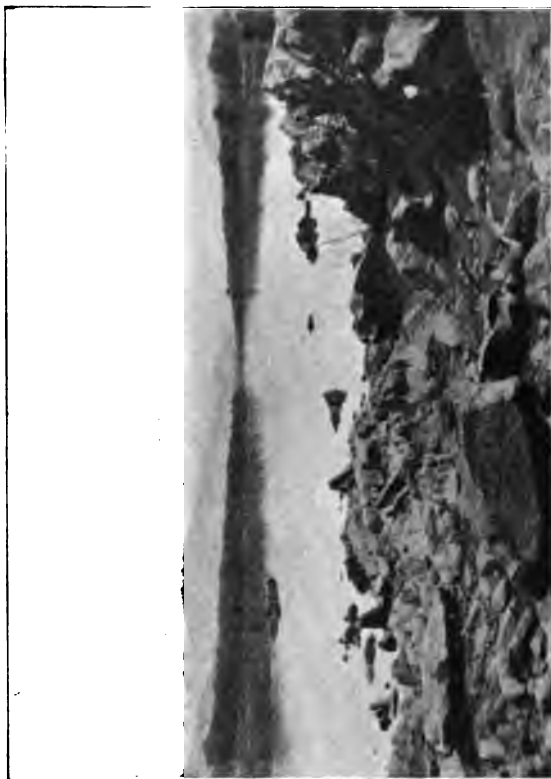
MAHOMET WAD HOJALI AND HIS STAFF. 4 A.



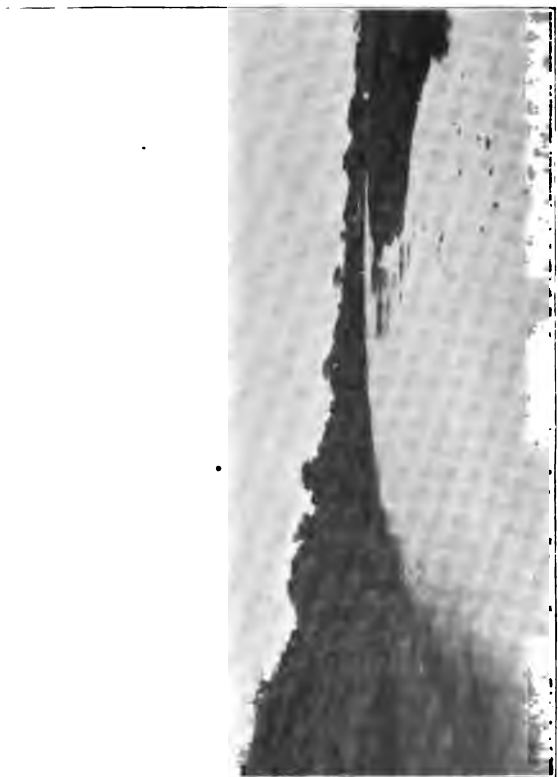
STREAM NEAR GOHA IN BEST RHANOU—(5,000 FT.). 2.



NATIVE BRIDGE ACROSS YABUS RIVER. 17.



THE BLUE NILE, WHERE IT CROSSES THE FRONTIER AT FAMAKA. 13.



RIVER FIEBOR. 19.



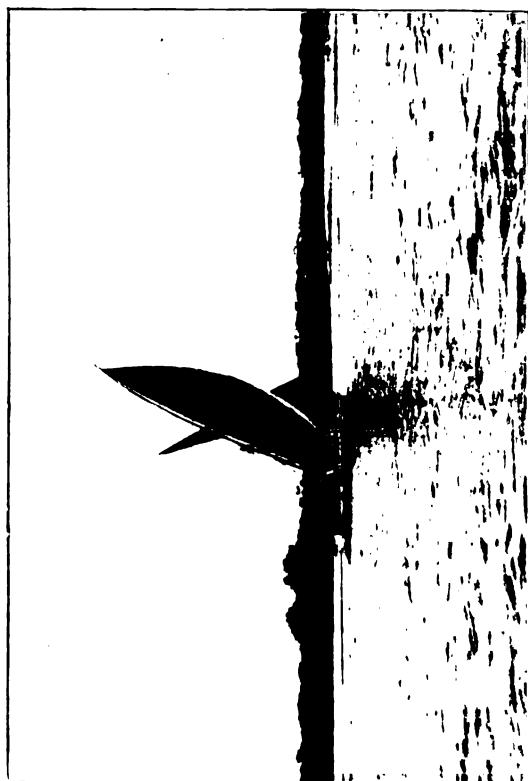
DRAWING WATER FROM A WELL NEAR SINKAT. 21.



JEBEL KEILI, SOUTH OF ROSEIRES (2,000 FEET). 14.



GHAMU : GALLA MARKET. O.D.



GYASSA, ON BLUE NILE, BETWEEN ROSEIRES AND SENNAR IN DECEMBER. 12.



DINKA BOYS : LOWER SOHAT, FUYONG. O.D.



HOUSES OF GUNIG HILL DWELLERS, BLUE NILE. 1 B.



BURUNS OF PLAINS, NEAR FASHODA AND ABYSSINIAN FRONTIER. 7 A.



HOUSES OF GUNIG NATIVES, FRONTIER, NEAR ABU RAMLA. 1 A.



YABUS (ROSEIRES), BETWEEN BLUE AND WHITE NILE. 3 B.



MAHOMET WAD HOJALI : A PRISONER WITH ABYSSINIANS. 4 B.



"WOMBER" YEMBO : STEWARD TO GALLA RULER. 5 A.



TYPES OF GALLAS AT GIDAMI. 5 C.



BAMBOO JUNGLE : BENI SHANGUL PLATEAU, KIRIX. 15 B.

The numbers refer to lists on pages 274 and 275.



RIVER DINDER IN EARLY FLOOD, NEAR DUNKUR, ABYSSINIA. 10 A.



DINKA BOYS: UKYONG, LOWER SOBAT. 9 A.



BURUN VILLAGE. 7 B.



UPPER SOBAT: NUERS AND DEAD HIPPO. 6.



NEAR ROSEIRES. THE RIVER YABUS. 3 A.



RIVER ATBARA AT LOW WATER, NEAR GALLABAT. 11.



RIVER BINDER IN EARLY FLOOD - FORDING THE STREAM 10 B.



RIVER ATBARA AT LOW WATER, NEAR GALLABAT. 11.

CHAPTER XV.

A PEEP INTO ABYSSINIA.

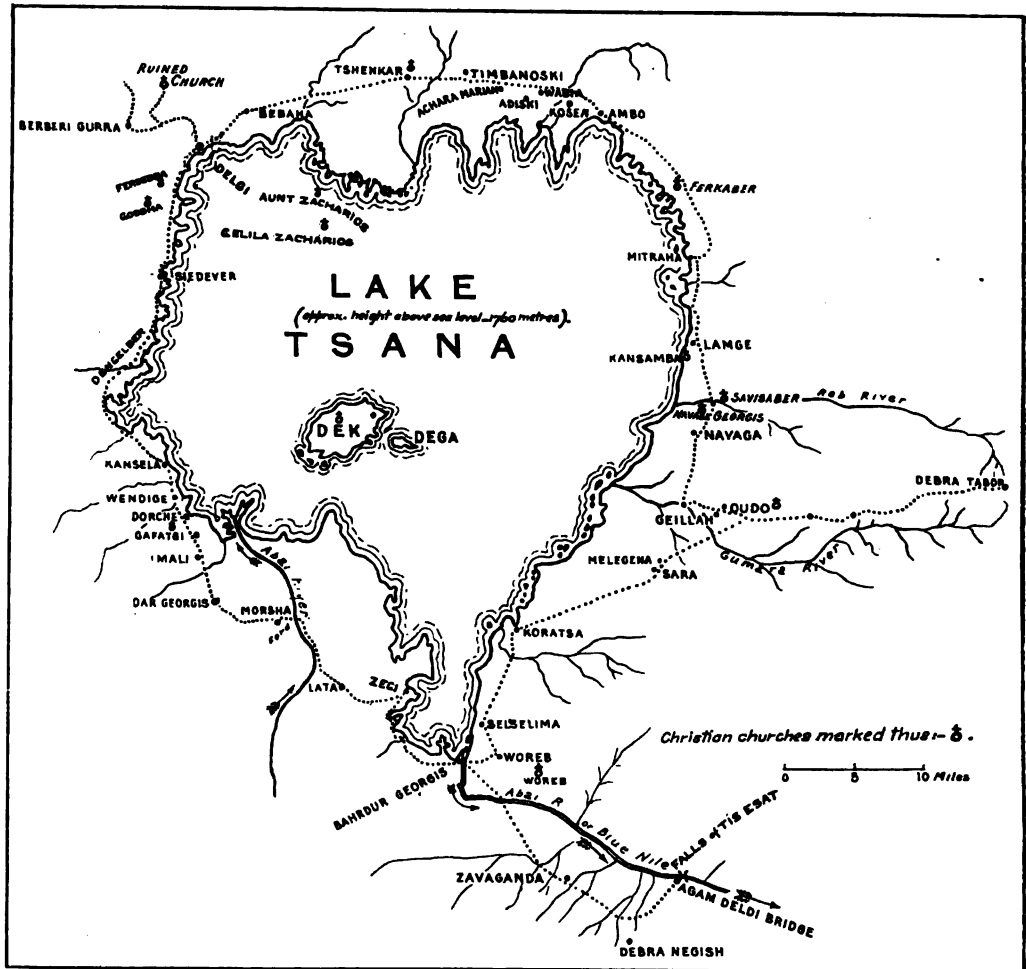
WITH MR. C. E. DUPUIS ON HIS UNIQUE EXPEDITION.



C. E. Dupuis.

ONDURMAN, WAD MEDANI, ABU HARAZ, THE BLUE NILE, THE RAHAD, GEDAREF, ARADEP,
DOKA, GALLABAT, THE CIRCUIT OF LAKE TSANA, ZEGI, DEBRA TABOR,
FASHER, THE ATBARA TO BERBER, KASSALA, SUAKIN.

ENLARGED MAP OF LAKE TSANA.



THE ROUTE FOLLOWED BY MR. C. E. DUPUIS IS SHOWN ON THE SKETCH MAP AT THE FRONT OF THE VOLUME.

CHAPTER XV.

THE BLUE NILE, GEDAREF, GALLABAT, AND LAKE TSANA.

MR. C. E. DUPUIS has recently returned from his adventurous mission to Abyssinia. He was sent by Sir William Garstin to report on the possibilities for irrigation of the regions watered by the Blue Nile and Atbara. He was also deputed to visit Lake



Tsana, and advise about its future as a possible Reservoir. It is pleasant to learn that this able Report and his high reputation in his profession have resulted in Mr. Dupuis being appointed Director of Irrigation for the Sudan.

I met Mr. Dupuis after his wonderful expedition. I was much fascinated by the story of his travels, and delighted when I was permitted to use his photographs of this hitherto unknown land. The expedition has hitherto only been heard of through Sir William Garstin's great Report on the Nile for 1904.

I propose to give a sketch of his wonderful tour and to bring into it other information supplied by Count Gleichen's Sudan Handbooks, and also by the Governor-General's recent official visits to Gedaref, Kassala, the Atbara and Suakin.

The journey of Mr. Dupuis was a pioneer one, a sort of voyage of exploration, but he has brought with him trial levels and measurements of the waters, and a series



MIDDAY HALT UNDER A "SHADY" TREE ON THE ROAD TO ABU HARAZ.

of photographs of the striking scenery of this hitherto unknown region. The tributaries of the Blue Nile and the Rahad pass through frequently tracts of wooded scenery, picturesque in a marked degree. The forests may prove most beneficent stores

of fuel for the Sudan, now that the Government have established an efficient Forestry Department.



DRY BED OF RIVER RAHAD ABOVE JUNCTION WITH BLUE NILE.

With regard to the Lake Tsana scheme, Mr. Dupuis's report is so new, that it is not likely to be taken in hand until a careful survey is made, for which the money has been already sanctioned by Lord Cromer. Mr. Dupuis has been given an efficient staff of assistants for this survey

and there will be no time lost. In fact the work has been already commenced.

Mr. Dupuis started from Khartoum on 6th December, 1902 with a full camping outfit and marched along the Blue Nile to Abu Haraz, 120 miles, in six days. He chose marching, instead of going by steamer, in order to study the country with a view to its capabilities of future irrigation.

In passing through the Gezira he alludes, in his Report, to the adoption of a very simple means of irrigation for that populous region, by a canal taken from the Blue Nile, near Sennar, through the heart of the province to Khartoum, such a canal to be used from July to December, without taking any of the water that may be required for Egypt. Perennial supplies could be obtained later on, when arrangements may



THE WESTERN SHORE, LAKE TSANA. AT SIEDEVER.

Dupuis.



ON THE RAHAD.



THE BANKS OF THE RIVER RAHAD.



ON THE RAHAD.



THE BANKS OF THE RAHAD.

possibly be made for Reservoirs for storing the flood-waters of the Blue Nile and its tributaries. The party visited Rufaa, where great crops are raised by rain culture, and there are many villages near it. The population is more scanty towards the Rahad, which joins the Blue Nile near Abu Haraz, where the expedition halted. At the time of their visit, the bed of the Rahad was dry, save for pools left by the summer torrents. It only flows for three or four months in the year, but even when there is no stream there are many very picturesque pools along its course, one of which he illustrates.

Mr. Dupuis went along the ravines of the Atbara for 40 miles, and then struck across the country to Gedaref, about 100 miles, where his party arrived on December 19th, 1903. There were few villages by the way, and only small areas of cultivation near the Rahad, but plenty of "cotton soil" if there were means for irrigating the land.



DRAWING WATER BETWEEN GEDAREF AND GALLABAT.

A great waterless plain exists between the Atbara and Gedaref (with outcrops of granite rock), which is entirely uninhabited. Near Gedaref there were many wells, now unused, but they could be opened again. They only saw one good well at a place called El Fau. Formerly there were populous villages and considerable cultivation.

Gedaref is about 600 feet higher than Khartoum. Mr. Dupuis states that if it were possible to make a canal through the land between the Rahad and Abu Haraz, there would be great possibilities of agricultural success, even though it only afforded water for a part of the year. By means of storage reservoirs, however, the waters of the Dinder and the Blue Nile, higher

up, may be used to supplement water for perennial irrigation at a future day.

If Gedaref is ever to have canals, however, they must be supplied from the Atbara, and as to supplies from this river, Mr. Dupuis is not very sanguine, as it is a torrential stream. But all will depend on the results of the exhaustive survey of the whole region which is about to be undertaken by Sir William Garstin's advice. This survey has been already sanctioned by Lord Cromer.

At Gedaref the party remained two days, to rest their camels, and study the requirements of the neighbourhood as far as irrigation projects might be beneficial.



CAMP ON THE ROAD BETWEEN GALLABAT AND LAKE TSANA.

Gedaref is an accumulation of small villages in a large open valley. The soil is fertile and almost everything planted seems to grow well. Mr. Dupuis thinks that Gedaref is but poorly supplied with water from wells. The existing wells make the place habitable, while other places are not; this is the small measure of praise he gives Gedaref. But

he suggests for this rather interesting district, small reservoirs of its own, by damming the khors with which the neighbourhood abounds, and by sinking more wells. It is not possible to give the people canal irrigation, the land round Gedaref being rocky and uneven, but more and better wells are needed urgently. Tanks, such as are used with success at Bundelkhund and elsewhere in India, should be adopted here. These would make this region into as good agricultural land as has been so created in India.

From Gedaref the party went to Gallabat, on the 26th December, making 364 miles from Khartoum. There is at first a broken country, and afterwards abundance of good cotton soil. The forest country here begins, white acacias and



THE RIVER ATBARA BETWEEN GALLABAT AND GEDAREF.

small trees generally, but a good deal of gum is produced from them. Coarse jungle grasses cover the country, much of which are annually burnt during the winter months to afford grazing for their cattle. Where the jungle is not burnt, it is impossible to see the country from its great height and denseness, and this impedes any correct description being given of it, except along the road travelled. Between Gedaref and Gallabat there are only two or three small villages, but many traces exist of former cultivation and population.

The waterless forests are infested with bees, which gave great annoyance to the travellers, but fortunately the stings have no permanent bad effect, although extremely annoying. As they journeyed south, they came into a region of a greatly increased rainfall, but wells are few and far between. Here again, Mr. Dupuis would introduce the Indian system, of small reservoirs or tanks, and he says were this done and more wells sunk, the region between and around Gallabat and Gedaref is capable of the greatest agricultural development.



DRAWING WATER AT GWERBE, BETWEEN GALLABAT AND GEDAREF.

Cotton is grown here, and several fields of fair cotton were seen at Gallabat, but this cotton was grown by rain only without irrigation and was therefore stunted.

A large quantity of cotton used to be grown here, and sent into Abyssinia—no doubt the district can be again developed for cotton-growing, but the varieties and culture must be improved.

Gallabat is a pleasant-looking place, where the Sudan plains terminate, and the Abyssinian mountains rise up beyond. The old fort of Gallabat is being adapted into the headquarters of the official Resident, and is well situated at about 150 feet above the town. Here as everywhere, the want of population is the dominant feature; this is, however, already beginning to right itself. Flocks of sheep and goats and good herds of cattle are met with, but not any proportion to what such a region could support, if it only had a water-supply.

The Atbara river lies to the north-east of Gallabat, about five miles off. They visited the river and found it to be a fine torrential stream about 100 metres wide,



THE SIRDAR'S PARTY EN ROUTE TO GALLABAT.

Sir Reginald Wingate.

and running about 5 metres depth in flood. There are many deep rocky pools and the river is altogether hidden frequently by the dense brushwood and forest growth, so much so, that it is an arduous task and almost impossible work to force a progress through the bush. Mr. Dupuis's photographs give an excellent idea of this hitherto little visited region.

We will devote a page or two to a description and historical sketch of the towns of Gedaref and Gallabat, taken from Count Gleichen's various Handbooks and Reports on the Sudan.

Gedaref and the district between the Rahad and Atbara rivers, about 4,000 square miles, is now vastly underpopulated, and much of it is unexplored.

The greater part of this region is fertile land, but it is questionable if it ever was properly developed. It only needs inhabitants and water and a minimum of labour to render it reproductive. To report on the possibility of providing a water-supply was the problem Mr. Dupuis has been sent to solve, there being no doubt that if



FOREST OF WHITE-STEMMED ACACIA NEAR GEDAREF.

water can be supplied, the peaceful rule of British protection will soon attract population. In pre-Mahdist days, the towns and region of Gedaref and the Old Gedaref (Suk abu Sin) were fertile and populous; its cornfields supplied the Sudan, and it was undoubtedly prosperous. The Dervishes devastated the place and captured the garrison in 1885. Ahmet Fedil was appointed Emir. In 1898 it was seized by a small column from Kassala under Colonel Parsons with 1,400 men, after a hazardous and successful fight a few miles outside the town; and though subsequently twice attacked by Ahmet Fedil, it held its own. The Dervish Emir fled southwards, and, after being repulsed at Roseires, met his fate within a year, at Omdebreikat, being killed, along with the Khalifa (Chapter XI.).

GEDAREF must be a pleasant place, although a friend of mine, whose duty compelled



WATERING THE CAMELS AT DOKA.

him to live there, said that after Khartoum (whence he was promoted to Gedaref) it is deadly dull! but I have heard the same remark as to Khartoum; it has its dull times too! This gentleman is a native Egyptian officer, one of the best, who had deservedly risen to the important post of Egyptian Inspector of the Kassala Mudiria, and was stationed at Gedaref. He speaks English perfectly, and

is a charming companion. He holds the rank of Major—Remzi Tahir is his name, and he has the title of Bey. He tells me (December, 1904) that in two years' time Gedaref will be able to produce cotton equal to the best Egyptian.

Gedaref is a fertile place, for the rains begin in June and last till October. The inhabitants in the district are of every tribe and shade of black. There are perennial wells which enrich its agriculture. When this now remote region is connected with Khartoum by railway, which Lord Cromer foreshadows in his latest Report, what a new world will be opened for trade and the development of this rich district! And for the tourist an entirely new field of travel, with an easy access to the fresh wonders of Abyssinia, and travel among an interesting, ancient Christian people. Sportsmen will find a wide highland country abounding in game.



ABYSSINIA : BELOW THE CREST OF THE PLATEAU ROAD FROM GALLABAT
TO LAKE TSANA.

The promised railway will develop this African Eden in a wonderful manner. But after the heavy rains the reverse of the medal is seen, and the paradise is often swept by fever, though from December to May the climate is perfect and completely healthy.

Gedaref district has 25,000 inhabitants. The town has only one street of good houses ; the

Government houses are of brick, all the rest are made of grass tukh, which has to be renewed every year.

The trade in gum is considerable, and imports of cotton goods and coffee from Gallabat, carried on by a few Greek merchants. Water is supplied from deep wells cut in the rock. There is a garrison of Arab soldiers from Kassala, an Egyptian Mainur, and, generally, a British Inspector.

There are many good gardens, growing the usual Sudan vegetables, and in addition, figs, limes, custard apples, and dates ; of the last, the trees bear two crops every year. Cotton is grown extensively for local use, but might be greatly improved in quality by irrigation.



ABYSSINIA : CAMP IN THE BAMBOO FOREST BETWEEN GALLABAT
AND LAKE TSANA.



WATERFALL ON THE RIVER ABAI, 20 MILES FROM LAKE OUTLET.

Cereals are grown for sale beyond their own consumption, and a very superior flour is made from a red variety of dura. The difference of the scenery of the neighbourhood in the rainy and dry seasons is remarkable. The tukh houses are rebuilt every year after the rains, and in October the whole place has

the appearance of a wreck, before the rebuilding takes place. The dura here grows 12 feet high, and close up to the houses, with passages between only 2 feet wide.

Gedaref will come within the new system of irrigation, which not only will improve its sanitary condition but will produce a wonderful growth of population and wealth.

The Governor-General on one of his recent tours of inspection to Kassala and Suakin, visited Gedaref, Gallabat, and Doka, a town lying between them. There an interesting crowd of well-dressed natives turned out to welcome the first visit of the Sirdar to their district.

GALLABAT lies between the Atbara and the Rahad. The whole region is



THE BATTLEFIELD WHERE KING JOHN WAS KILLED. 18 B. *Gagan.*

thickly wooded, and abounds in game. In the vicinity of Gallabat town there are perennial streams of running water, and the country was once well cultivated. The population was dense before the Dervish and Abyssinian wars but is now only about 3,000, but will soon increase.

Gallabat is a small province in comparison with Gedaref, only about 1,200 square miles. The town is called by the Abyssinians Matemma. It is pleasantly situated on the left bank of a Khor, which is here the boundary of Abyssinia. The Atbara is but five miles off. In ancient days Gallabat was a great slave mart, and was supposed to belong in its palmy days to Abyssinia. The Dervishes attacked and sacked it in



ABYSSINIAN GROUP OF NATIVES AT OUR CAMP AT SARA, EAST OF LAKE TSANA.

1886. Three years later King John of Abyssinia, burning with fury at the sack of his own town, Gondar, by the Mahdists, collected his warriors and fought a tremendous battle here, with 80,000, or more, on either side, in March, 1889. The Abyssinians were victorious, but a stray shot killed King John after the battle had been won. This caused a panic among the Abyssinians, who turned and fled. Gallabat was quite ruined by the Dervish occupation, and is only now beginning to revive, but is retarded by frequent incursions of robbers from along the Abyssinian frontier.

The Anglo-Egyptian flags were hoisted here on 7th December, 1898, by Collinson Pasha. The Abyssinian flag was then flying on the fort, but an amicable arrangement was come to afterwards. It is difficult to realise now that this place was once a great centre of trade, and it seems doubtful

if it may ever regain it. The old Dervish fort still overlooks the town, and there is a splendid view from it looking towards the Atbara, and on a clear day the mountains surrounding Lake Tsana can be seen. The scene of the battlefield where King John was killed lies below. Major Gwynn has kindly supplied photographs of this neighbourhood, taken when he was surveying the frontier line (Chapter XIV.). Gallabat has a trade in exporting cotton and in imported Manchester goods. Half the annual Customs duties, by an amicable arrangement with King Menelek's Government, go to Abyssinia. The total is only about £750, but it will one day be a much larger amount.

Honey is collected at certain seasons in great quantities with much skill by the natives; the time for seeking it being denoted by the note of a certain bird. Honey and water is always proffered to the travellers. There were formerly beautiful gardens surrounding the town, but the Dervishes are said to have cut down all the trees, and the gardens disappeared. A small garrison is supplied from Gedaref and it has a police force, and post and telegraph offices. Water supply is from the Khor near the town, but as this becomes foul in the dry season, there is much need of a water supply from the permanent streams at some distance. Roads lead to Gondar, Kwara, Dunkur, Roseires, Rahad, and Gedabi. The Abyssinians will not take English or Egyptian money, preferring still Maria Theresa dollars, so strongly do the ancient traditions cling to trade exchanges.

LAKE TSANA AND THE BLUE NILE; EXCURSIONS OF MR. C. E. DUPUIS TO
ABYSSINIA AND THE ATBARA.

The party waited at Gedaref for Mr. Johannis, the interpreter, sent by Colonel



HEAD PRIEST OF THE CHURCH AT KARATA, EAST
SIDE OF LAKE TSANA.

Harrington, our representative at Menelek's Court. Here 70 donkeys had to be purchased, and an escort of the Arab troops from the small garrison accompanied them for their explorations in Abyssinia. Their party now numbered 45 persons.

In nine days' marching they reached Delgi, on Lake Tsana, about 92 miles distant from Gallabat. The course of the Gundwaha river was followed for two-thirds of the way. This is a part of the Atbara, flowing through the Sudan and joining the Nile near Berber. The Atbara thus avoids the lake, although so near it. The party then crossed the watershed, and travelled by the Giro river till they came in sight of Lake Tsana.

Near the Giro, they found hot springs of perfectly clear, soft water, but so warm that the hand could not be held in it. These springs are visited for healing purposes by the scanty inhabitants of this part of Abyssinia.



ABYSSINIA : AMONGST THE REEDS AND PAPYRUS ON THE EDGE OF LAKE TSANA.

The road winds down over undulating plains to the lake. It passes some patches of cultivation, but the plains are mostly completely covered with high grass. Much of the country near Gallabat is uninhabited, and is infested with bands of robbers, so the soldiers were quite necessary. These brigands live in villages hidden in the

forests, and prey upon the passing caravans. The road is rough and a mere track among rocks, stones, and trees, and laden donkeys had great worry in forcing a way through these obstacles. A native petty chief tried to stop them, notwithstanding the King's letters they bore, but this stoppage was surmounted, and the party descended from the plateau to the edge of the blue Lake Tsana. The people were rather unfriendly and suspicious, till a man arrived next day with orders from Ras Guksa, and after that all went well. This envoy was to accompany them in their journeys. After he joined they had no more trouble, and did exactly as they liked.

Delgi is a village on the lake, and is beautifully situated on a rocky promontory. It is a port, without a harbour, to which the coffee



ABYSSINIA : CROSSING THE RIVER ABAI NEAR THE LAKE OUTLET.

grown on the south-eastern shore is brought for being transported to the Sudan. The view here of the lake is most beautiful. The mountains of the Gorgora peninsula and its islands in front, and the lake extending to a water horizon, from east round to south. Distant mountains are visible to the north and north-east and also to south and west. On a clear day the faint outline only of the conical hill on Doga Island can be seen in the south-east. The effect of the beautiful scene on the mind is, that the lake seems much larger than it looks on the map. The mountains rise directly out of the water, in some instances, but generally they recede from it in terraces, and thence rise up boldly, till they show elevations of importance and fine effect.



ABYSSINIA : LYCHGATE ENTRANCE TO THE CHURCH
AT KARATA.

The geological character of the rocks resembles those of the Sudan gneiss, granite and quartz with intrusive igneous rocks interspersed. Sandstone and limestone are said to be found, but Mr. Dupuis saw none of these himself. Large tracts of comparatively level land consist almost entirely of black cracked cotton-soil, usually found associated with igneous rocks. There are several large rivers flowing into the lake, and at the mouths of all are extensive alluvial plains composed entirely of this same black cotton-soil. This should be of the greatest possible fertility, but nine-tenths of the area grows nothing but coarse grass. This is not the reedy grass of the Sudan, but a luxuriant plant, 6 or 8 feet high, of tall straight growth. It is not the custom here to burn it, so it offers great difficulty to getting about. There is an open park-like aspect of landscape

with tall acacias standing up through the grass. This has a pleasant appearance from a distance, but it is dispelled on near acquaintance, by the trouble in getting through the long grass. The rougher ground and the hills are covered with scrub forest. The lake is shallow round its coast, with a firm sandy bottom, shelving out a long way. The water is margined with reeds, and above, a bank of grass leading up to the high water line. Papyrus swamps exist only on the southern side. Mr. Dupuis decided to march round the lake by the north and east through Ras Guksa's country, as with his man to guide them, the party would meet with no opposition.



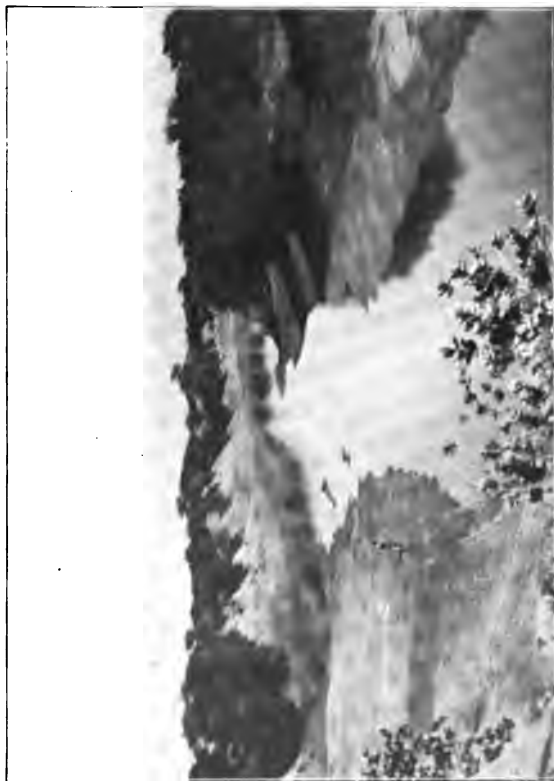
CAMP AT ABU HARAZ, BLUE NILE, 120 MILES FROM KHARTOUM.



MID-DAY HALT: MARCH BETWEEN BLUE NILE AND GEDAREF.



PUTTING GUNS AWAY AFTER A HALT ON THE ROAD, BACK OF THE BLUE NILE.



RIVER RAHAD, 20 MILES FROM ITS JUNCTION WITH BLUE NILE.

They left Delgi on 10th January, 1903; the path is narrow and diverging, frequently no progress could have been made had they not had a guide. A halt was made at a beautiful spot named Mitraha, on the east shore, and a visit was paid to the ruins of a Christian Church, which had been destroyed by the Dervishes, and marks the limit of their invasion on this side. Here supplies were obtained, but when a move onward was made, the River Reb gave great trouble to get the donkeys across it. The stores were ferried over by the Berthon boat. Here the party suffered much from the cold at night, it being impossible to get wood for fires, or to have them at all in the grass land.

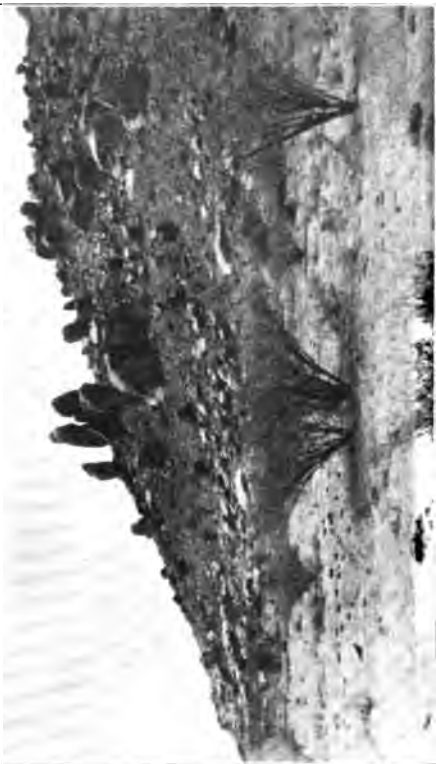


THE ABAI RIVER FROM DELDI BRIDGE.

The Gamara river was easily crossed, by a ford some way up, and the volume of its waters was ascertained. Here a flying visit was paid to Debra Tabor, the residence of the Ras Guksa, to thank him for the help he had sent. This place is said to be 8,820 feet above the sea. They found that the Ras had received a letter about them from King Menelek, and he was most attentive, showing great interest in the mission. One of their men took ill by the way, and was left in a cottage, where two Abyssinian women attended him kindly, but he died next day.

The country here is granite rocks above, with cotton soil in the lower levels. A religious festival was being held at Debra Tabor, "the Baptism of our Lord," which was attended by a large number of well-dressed folk.

At Koratsa, the first coffee plantations were seen, for which this district is famous. There was difficulty in discovering the proper way to investigate the rather involved outlet of the lake, and very little reliable information could be obtained from the natives. Some stay was made at a place called Woreb, whence surveys were made, and soon afterwards they approached the River Abai, which is the only outlet of the lake, and is, in fact, what we know as the Blue Nile. The party crossed the river successfully and encamped again on the shores of Lake Tsana on 31st January. Here careful observations proved the discharge from the lake to be 42 cubic metres per second, or about 3,500,000 cubic metres per day. Mr. Dupuis says that this was the most important knowledge, and was, in fact, that which they were primarily sent to ascertain.



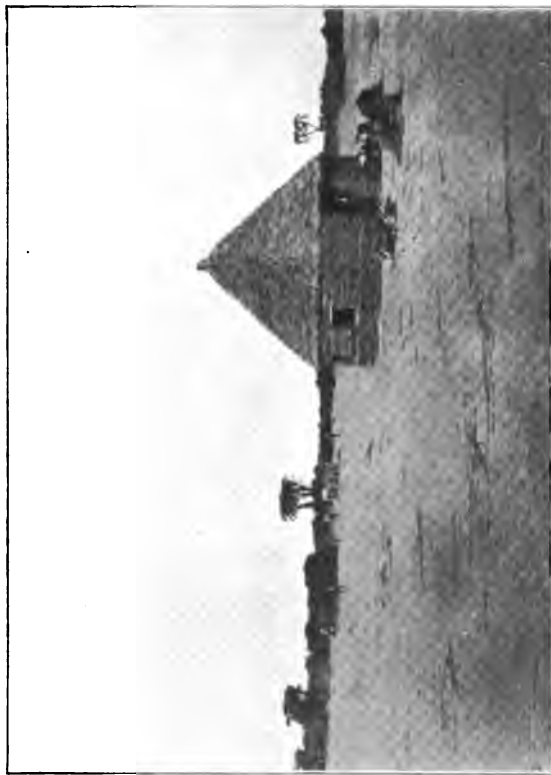
CURIOUS ROCKS : ATRARA, BERBER ROAD.



WATERING SHEET, VALLEY OF THE GASH, KASSALA.



THE RIVER ATBARA AT FASHER FORD, 40 MILES FROM KASSALA.



REST-HOUSE : KASSALA, BERBER ROAD.

This must seem an enormous amount of water, but it appears that previous travellers had represented the discharge as much greater than this, and Mr. Dupuis was evidently rather disappointed with the result obtained by his investigations.

However, he tells us that 1902 was a year of very light rainfall, and the amount of water was very probably below the average; Mr. Dupuis says that considering the great extent of the lake and the small area of its powers of catchment, no doubt there must be an enormous loss by evaporation, more than was expected in fact. Mr. Dupuis is not over sanguine about the capabilities of Lake Tsana as a reservoir, although he recommends that a more careful survey should be made of the whole locality before we decide against it. He estimates the total yearly water given out by the only outlet as 3,000,000,000 cubic metres. This to outsiders seems great enough for anything, but it seems that it is not enough, he is afraid, to warrant the making of a costly reservoir.



ABYSSINIAN SOLDIER SENT TO ATTEND US BY
RAS MANGASHA.

The River Abai leaves the lake by an exceedingly involved and irregular series of rapids and channels, and these unite and form a good stream of 200 metres wide. It then narrows into a rapid stream, and 20 miles off is crossed by an old bridge at Agam Deldi, said to have been built by the Portuguese. Mr. Dupuis visited this and gives photographs of the bridge, which is remarkable as being the only one that crosses the Blue Nile in its whole course. He tells us that the gorge is even more picturesque than the quaint old bridge. The river foams and roars, the rocks of the ravine

approach so close that a man could jump across at places. Mr. Dupuis scouts the idea of making a reservoir here, as had been suggested at this point. Indeed the control of the Blue Nile and the diversion of its waters here he considers quite absurd. The mountains rise up to 3,000 feet on either side of the valley in which this wild foaming torrent rushes madly down, and to curb it or dam it he considers an impossibility. He was greatly struck with the scene below the old bridge. The falls are exceedingly fine, and the river descending 150 feet or more, plunges at a single leap into a profound abyss. The place is exceedingly difficult to find, and they



ABYSSINIA : ON THE ROAD FROM LAKE TSANA TO DEBRA TABOR.



GANDWAHA RIVER (UPPER ATHARA), ROAD BETWEEN GALLABAT AND L. TSANA.



CAMP ON THE ROAD BETWEEN LAKE TSANA AND DEBRA TABOR.



ABYSSINIAN HUTS, NEAR THE ROAD FROM LAKE TSANA TO DEBRA TABOR.

nearly missed it altogether. This makes it seem strange why the bridge was built by Portuguese or anybody else.

It was necessary to complete the circuit of the lake, and the rest of its borders were in the territory of another Ras (or prince) one Ras Mangasha: no letters to him had been provided, and so Mr. Dupuis forwarded his credentials from King Menelek to the capital of this potentate, at Buré. His messengers returned with everything necessary, letters to the local chief, and a man specially sent as guide and escort. They left Bahdur Georgis on the 4th February, and delayed two days at Zegi waiting the

return of the messengers. The local chief at Zegi was not friendly, and so the orders from the ruling Ras made all pleasant.

Zegi is the centre of the coffee producing country, and is the most populous and flourishing portion of the lake district. The whole of the hilly peninsula is one vast coffee-estate, the coffee bushes growing under the shade of tall trees, the best they had seen.

Numerous narrow, shady paths wind about connecting the numerous villages, and the whole region has the air of comfort and prosperity in contrast to all the rest of the borders of the lake.

Leaving Zegi on 7th of February, the party completed the return journey to Delgi in four days.

The chief object of the expedition was to visit the Abai river—that is the main stream which supplies the

lake, and indeed, as the name implies, runs through it, or rather expands into the wide waters of Lake Tsana, for it enters on the same side as it flows out. It is a fine-looking stream with a clean section of about 80 metres wide, and runs in a flat-bottomed valley of some three miles wide, which is said to be fully flooded in the rainy season. It reaches Lake Tsana through a marshy papyrus swamp. They crossed it by a ford some miles up the stream, where there are rocky shallows, estimated to pass 1,000,000 cubic metres per day. None of the other streams entering the lake equal or approach to the Abai, and most of them are absolutely dry for a portion of the year.

The ground on the west side descends more steeply to the lake than elsewhere, and



DELGI BRIDGE AND TOLL HOUSE, ABOUT 20 MILES
FROM LAKE TSANA.



ABYSSINIA : A SIDE CHANNEL OF THE RIVER AT THE OUTLET, LAKE TSANA.



RUINED CHURCH, SIEDEVER, ABYSSINIA.



OLD PORTUGUESE BRIDGE ON ABAI RIVER, 20 MILES FROM LAKE TSANA.



RIVER ABAI, BLUE NILE, LEAVING LAKE TSANA.



IN THE COFFEE PLANTATIONS OF ZEGI. SOUTH-EAST OF THE LAKE.

almost impossible to obtain, and only potatoes and onions, and they only at Zegi. Dura, teff, gram, and barley are mostly cultivated, and a little cotton of poor quality. Teff flour is the standard food of the people, made into fine soft cakes resembling the English "crumpet." Presents of these cakes, milk, flour, eggs, fowls and teja barley were brought by the headmen of the villages on arrival at any camp—very frequently this occurred, but not always. There was some difficulty in paying for these "gifts," or knowing whom to pay, but the headman always insisted that they were presents from his master, Ras Guksa. It is possible they were obtained under pressure from the villagers. But had there been no representatives of the powerful Ras, it would have been impossible to obtain supplies.

Great herds of cattle are found all round the lake. Mr. Dupuis sees in these

the scenery about Dengelber, with its bays, promontories and islands, is most beautiful. Dengelber was the limit of the Dervish raids on this side of the lake.

After two days spent at Delgi, the party returned to Gallabat by the same route they had come. Cattle, sheep, and grain were everywhere most moderate in price. Vegetables



ABYSSINIA : THE RIVER REB, EAST OF LAKE TSANA.



ABYSSINIA : GROUP AT THE HOUSE OF A PETTY CHIEF AT ZEGI.



ON THE ATHARA, MID-DAY HALT.



ABYSSINIA : SHATTERED VOLCANIC ROCKS AT THE OUTLET OF LAKE TSANA.



FORD ON THE ABAL, ABOUT 5 MILES FROM THE LAKE OUTLET.

conditions the foundation of a large and profitable market for the Sudan, where cattle are scarce. Donkeys and mules are plentiful here also and are wanted in the Sudan. By cultivating peaceful relations with Abyssinia, there should be a great development of trade between the countries.

LAKE TSANA AS A RESERVOIR.

Mr. Dupuis devotes five closely printed pages of his official report to the matter of Lake Tsana as a possible Reservoir for the Nile. His figures and words are too technical for ordinary readers, but the essence of his advice seems to be :—1. That the Blue Nile and



CANDELABRUM EUPHORBIA, SIEDEVER, LAKE TSANA.

its origin, Lake Tsana, should be reserved for the future wants of the Sudan, of which they are the natural feeders. 2. That a very complete survey should, as soon as possible, be made of the whole region for irrigation purposes. 3. That it would be comparatively easy and inexpensive to make a Regulator some ten miles from the exit of the Abai from the lake, and he believes that this will be certainly done some day, in the interests of the Sudan, but there will be none to spare for Egypt.

It is evident, however, that Mr. Dupuis is uneasy lest Abyssinia might yet, politically, give trouble about this lake; however, that danger might be arranged by diplomacy. Mr. Dupuis remarks incidentally that from its peculiar position a tunnel could be readily constructed to draw off every drop of the waters of the lake.

MR. DUPUIS'S EXPEDITION (CONTINUED).—LAKE TSANA TO KASSALA AND BERBER BY THE RIVER ATBARA.

At Gallabat the interpreter and the donkey drivers and donkeys and their saddles, were all left behind, and the camels were again employed for the northward journey down the Atbara to Kassala and Berber, starting on February 23rd. For 40 miles the road skirted the Atbara or a couple of miles off the course. Its bed is 100 to 120 metres wide, granite outcrops crossing it.



ABYSSINIA : CAMP AT SARA, EAST OF LAKE TSANA.



ABYSSINIA : RAPIDS ON THE RIVER ABAI, 10 MILES FROM LAKE OUTLET.



ABYSSINIA : RELIGIOUS CEREMONIAL, DEBRA TABOR.



FORD ON THE RIVER ABAI, 10 MILES FROM OUTLET, LAKE TSANA.



ROCKY GORGE AND POOL, ATBARA, NEAR RIVER SALAAM.

At this time of year there is no flow of water, only large standing pools, with the marks of the floods of the rainy season, 4 to 6 metres above their present level. The journey was continued by Sharafa, and a detour made to Goresha, a large and flourishing village with a good well, in open ground. Here Mr.

Dupuis and Mr. Crawley made an exploration along the River Salaam, to try to find its junction with the Atbara, but were unable to get through the trackless bush and gave up the attempt. They struck the Atbara at a point below where the junction must be. Here the wild ungovernable stream has forced a way through sandstone rock 20 metres wide, with cliffs rising perpendicularly over a profoundly deep pool. They camped beside this gorge for the night, and again next day started afresh to seek the junction of the Salaam, but again failed to find it. In their absence one of their camels had been killed by a lion quite close to the camp. They returned to Goresha, and continued their journey to Aradib and Sofi to the junction of the River Settit with the



THE ATBARA, NEAR SETTIT JUNCTION.



THE DOCTOR FISHING IN THE ABAL, ABOUT 10 MILES FROM LAKE OUTLET.



ABYSSINIA : CAMP AT WOREB, NEAR THE OUTLET OF LAKE TSANA.



KORATSA VILLAGE, FROM THE CHURCHYARD.



ABYSSINIA : THE DOCTOR AT WORK, KORATSA, EAST OF LAKE TSANA.



THE JUNCTION OF THE ATBARA AND RIVER SETTIT.

Atbara. Through this country there were occasional villages with considerable areas of crops, but traces of much more land having formerly been under cultivation. Hereabouts and towards Kassala, great distress reigned among the cultivators from a blight on all crops, a sticky deposit having formed all over the dura plants known as "azal"—

or honey—which destroyed all growth. South of Tabrakhalla the Atbara flows in a deep raviny channel 100 feet below the level of the plain, the plain itself being broken and undulating.

At the Settit junction the valley must be 200 feet deep. Above the ravine the wide plain is covered with rich cotton soil, but all hidden with bush. Mr. Dupuis, with his engineer's eye, saw sites for reservoir tanks for irrigating this region, when the time comes, in the Khors, two or three of which could readily be used for this purpose.

At Aradeb and Sofi the Atbara is about 150 metres wide on the average. In the 1902 flood it ran about 6 metres of water. In March, 1903, there was still a trickle of water moving down from pool to pool. The Settit seemed to Mr. Dupuis to be the larger and more important river of the two, the Atbara having the character of a wild mountain torrent with fiercer floods. The Settit had some flow of water on March 8th, while the Atbara



THE ATBARA BETWEEN KASSALA AND BERBER.



ABYSSINIA : CROSSING RIVER ABAL, NEAR THE OUTLET OF LAKE TSANA.



BELFRY HOUSE IN CORNER OF CHURCHYARD AT KORATSA.



ABYSSINIA : THE MARKET AT ZEGI.



ABYSSINIA : THE CHRISTIAN CHURCH AT ZEGI, SOUTH-EAST SIDE OF LAKE TSANA.

had a mere trickle. From this onward the road avoids the ravines by the river and strikes away from its course two miles or so, and the river is not seen again till



KASSALA AND JEBEL KASSALA FROM MUDIR'S GARDENS.

Khashim el Girba is reached. This is a very remarkable spot and probably the site of large canal works should such ever be made on the Atbara. This river flows for a couple of miles in a deep trench about 100 metres wide at summer level 10 metres deep all across the pool. The sides of this trench are composed of hard granite rising vertically from the water 20 metres or more. Below the river fans out into three or four separate branches and

spreads among rocky islands, not joining into one stream for several miles. The telegraph line crosses the deep gorge, and it was here that arrangements were made for erecting the gauge for measuring and recording the river's flow, and telegraphing the records of its rising.

The road to Kassala crosses the Atbara a few miles further on, at Fasher, where it has a wide, uniform, shallow, pebbly bed. Here there was a small discharge in the centre of the bed, but at Goz Rejeb, some 80 miles further south, all flow had ceased.

From Fasher to Kassala is a waterless march of 40 miles over a perfectly level

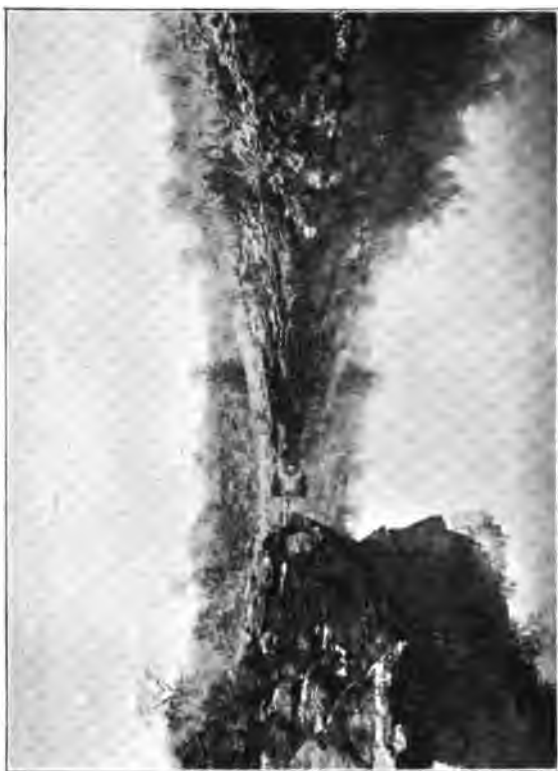


CURIOUS ROCKS AT GOZ REJEB, ON THE ATBARA BETWEEN BERBER AND KASSALA.

bush-covered plain. The whole of this magnificent plain of rich soil is uninhabited and utterly desolate. There are a few temporary Arab huts at Fasher, and a police



NATIVES AT DOKA, NEAR GALLABAT.



ROCKY GORGE ON THE ATBARA.



A MID-DAY REST : EN ROUTE TO GALLABAT.



HALT ON THE ROAD BETWEEN ABU HARAZ AND GEDAREF.

post at Mogatta. Game is fairly abundant and lions abound along the river. The party arrived at Kassala on 15th March, and remained four days. The River Gash at Kassala is a good one for only three months in the year. It is absolutely dry for nine months. With all this Mr. Dupuis sees a possibility of doing great things for the River Gash, in the way of irrigation. This is a very peculiar river indeed, like nothing else in the Sudan. It is quite a large and important stream, running open for 150 miles, and yet it is ultimately entirely lost in its own silt. It never reaches the Atbara, at least it never does so now, although marked as a tributary of that river on



CURIOUS STONE AT GOZ REJEB, ATBARA, BETWEEN
BERBER AND KASSALA.

maps. The Gash in fact disappears entirely six or seven miles below Kassala. For 80 days in the year it is a wide stream, but shallow, with 8,000,000 to 5,000,000 cubic metres per day.

There was a system of damming up the whole river higher up, and though done in primitive fashion about 90 years ago, it did good service till 30 years ago, when possibly through the troubles of the time, these dams and canals were neglected and allowed to fall out of use. Mr. Dupuis would spent a few thousands on restoring these works, rude as they were, at once, and he recommends a careful irrigation survey to be made as soon as possible, from which he has every confidence that a complete success can be obtained for controlling and utilizing the great possibilities of the Gash.

At present, water is obtained wherever wells are sunk. All this is owing to the Gash waters below. He would at once have many more wells sunk, so as to extend cultivation till the new system of irrigation be devised and carried out. The rich soil which exists everywhere in this region will well repay almost at once the entire cost of the survey and the temporary restoration of the old irrigation dam and canal.

We shall now return to the Atbara trip with Mr. Dupuis, promising to revert to Kassala later; of course it was for irrigation affairs alone that the recent expedition



ABYSSINIA : GROUP OF NATIVES AT KASSALA, WEST SIDE OF LAKE TSANA.



SHISHEMA CAMP, 20 MILES SOUTH OF GALLABAT.



RIVER ATBARA : ARADEB, NEAR GEDAREF.



ON THE ROAD BETWEEN THE BLUE NILE AND GEDAREF.

was sent, so they only remained there a few days. They returned from Kassala on 20th March to Ras Gojeb, and proceeded to Berber by the road, which does not always follow the Atbara, as the river flows in a wide channel, almost dry in that month.



DOM PALMS, BANKS OF LOWER ATBARA.

But there are large pools at intervals, frequently a kilometre long by 100 metres, full of large fish and crocodiles. The hippopotami which formerly abounded in them are nearly extinct. The River Atbara is bounded by the usual fringe of ravines, but the banks do not rise above the flood level more than 100 feet anywhere. In the last 100 miles of its course the river is margined by a dense belt of dom palms which is practically impenetrable. Mr. Dupuis says this district may be possible to irrigate by the basin system, but he cannot speak without a careful survey, with levels being taken, of the whole river, or at least of many parts of it. His visit was too brief to do more than give a general view, and he learnt only that the region is well worth the cost of being surveyed, correctly mapped, and studied carefully for irrigation enterprises.

As a general rule he thinks little of the wild turbulent Atbara for irrigation uses. However, he devotes some four pages to this general impression formed from an irrigation engineer's point of view. He specially advises a canal being formed to feed the tongue of land between the Nile and the Atbara, as this fertile land could easily be reached by a canal.



JUNCTION OF ATBARA AND NILE.

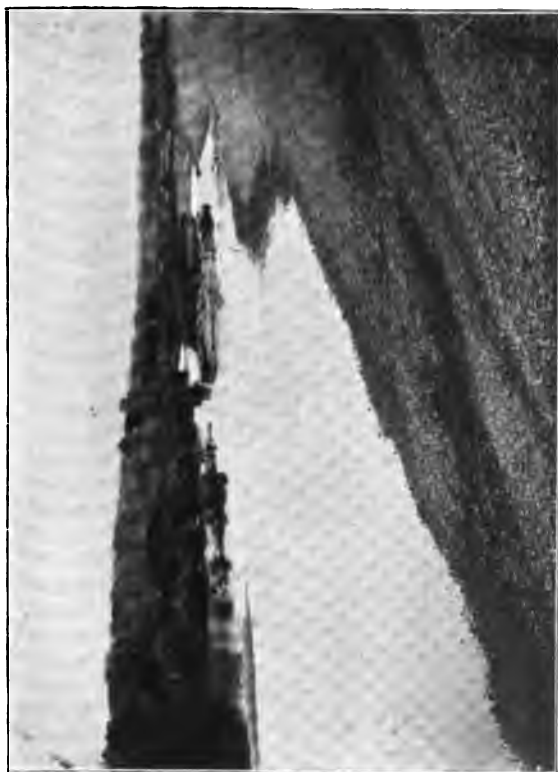
Mr. Dupuis gives many sectional plans and important technical information



RIVER ATBARA, NEAR GALLABAT, AT THE ABYSSINIAN FRONTIER.



RIVER ATBARA BETWEEN GEDAREF AND GALLABAT.



RIVER ATBARA, NEAR GALLABAT.



CAMP ON THE BANK OF THE ATBARA, NEAR GALLABAT.

regarding the rivers he visited, and an immense amount of valuable calculations as to the volume of their waters at different seasons, too scientific for a book like the present. As to the Atbara, he says that great reservoirs would be needed to impound the waters of the floods for future use.



KASSALA.

Lieut.-Col. Penton.

But he suggests that below Salaam junction would be the best place for such a dam, with secondary dam and canals below it.

He evidently is not of opinion that Egypt (that is, the Nile) would be benefited by such a storage of the Atbara. But he strongly recommends the formation of permanent villages on the fertile land, supplied by means of wells and tanks to store the rain water which falls plenti-

fully in the wet season. This, I may remark, was undoubtedly the way in which the ruined cities of Naga, Meroë and others, now found in barren regions, were plentifully supplied with water 2,000 years ago, and there must have been rich crops to feed such extensive populations of the well-to-do people. We part from Mr. Dupuis and the pictorial illustrations of his remarkable journey in lands unvisited by Europeans since the days of Bruce, with every expression of gratitude for his most interesting guidance.

KASSALA.

The opening of the railway to Suakin will, it is hoped, in some way facilitate a visit to KASSALA. Lord Cromer foreshadows other railway communication with this region by way of Gedaref, in his 1904 Report. At present they have to be visited by camel transport and with an escort. Kassala and Adarama are the only towns worth naming in Sudan territory east of the Atbara river; Adarama



BEGINNING OF THE SUAKIN-BERBER RAILWAY. MARCH, 1904.

Lieut.-Col. Penton.



TYPICAL GRANITE HILL, WATERLESS PLAIN BETWEEN BLUE NILE AND GEDAREF



RIVER ATEARA, NEAR GALLABAT.



CAMP : THE FIRST BETWEEN GEDAREF AND GALLABAT.



KHOR OTEUB, NEAR GALLABAT.

is about 78 miles from its junction with the Nile. It was the headquarters of Osman Digna, but is now almost deserted. The country between Adarama and Kassala is a vast plain, part of which produces cotton, and there are regions of dwarf trees and bushes with stretches of coarse grass, until the fertile soil adjoining the Khor el Gash is reached. Here we have dom palms, tamarisk trees and thorny scrub. The Gash is a fine water for part of the year, but its flood is ultimately lost in the extreme flatness of the country. The natives say it has an underground channel to the Atbara, at Adarama.

Lord Cromer has great hopes of the successful treatment of the mysterious Gash river, and places it in the projects in the first rank of necessary public works. Always practical, he points out that for an outlay of £500,000, a direct income of £50,000 per annum can be realized, and 100,000 acres brought under cultivation. We

may soon see this good work commenced, and a great river put to useful ways to benefit the country.

The valleys supplied by the Gash are richly cultivated. Kassala itself has many gardens, and must be a very pleasant place at certain seasons. There are two very remarkable mountains, Jebels Mokram and Kassala, which rise abruptly from the plain three miles to



THE FIRST CUTTING OF THE BERBER-SUAKIN RAILWAY (GRANITE ROCK) MARCH, 1904. (*Hadendowas employed.*)

the east and south-east. The highest of the peculiar dome-shaped protuberances is 2,604 feet above the town, and is visible for 60 or 70 miles. There are several perennial springs in the mountains. There is a strong garrison kept there with a battalion of native irregulars, reputed the best scouts in the Sudan. The tribes are Beni Amers, Hadendowas and Abyssinians. There are 200 of these scouts mounted on camels. They did good service for us in the war, and are the best and most suitable troops for peace time. Here resides the loyal family of El Morghani, whose youthful head we have restored to his traditional supremacy.

Kassala was held for us by the Italians during the Dervish War. Its trade is returning, and it has a total population in town and country of 23,000. The townspeople are principally Halenga Arabs, who are excellent cultivators. The climate is healthy for eight months in the year. There is a weekly camel-post for both letters and parcels to and from Berber, also a weekly mail from Kerin and Massawa for letters



WELL NEAR SUAKIN : HADENDOWAS DRAWING WATER.



SUAKIN MARKET. APRIL, 1904.



KASSALA : THE KADMIA, SHEIKH MORGHANI TOMB.



DESCENT FROM ERKOWEIT, 4,000 FEET ABOVE SEA LEVEL, TO SUAKIN. 1904.

and parcels. Telegraph lines connect Suakin, Massawa, Gedaref and Gallabat. Big and small game of almost every kind is plentiful, from elephant to quail, in this wide region, but rhinoceros and buffalo are rare.

SUAKIN.

THE OUTLET OF THE SUDAN ON THE RED SEA.



EN ROUTE BETWEEN KASSALA AND SUAKIN.

Sir Reginald Wingate.

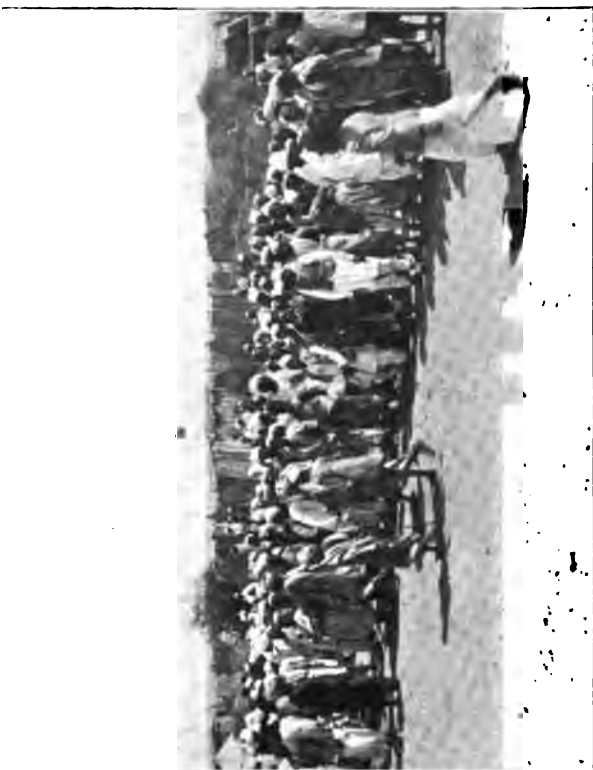
In a previous chapter, we left the railway line at Berber to speak of the places to the east, by the Atbara valley and towards the new railway leading to Suakin, which is now progressing fast towards completion. It may be well, therefore, to say a few words about Suakin itself, which is soon to become the seaport of the Sudan.

The present town of Suakin is built, partly on land and partly on an island joined by a causeway, still called after the great Gordon himself, "Gordon's Gate and Causeway." The Government buildings are situated on the island, and are imposing structures of coral. The population is between 6,000 and 7,000. The town has strong defences, built against the Dervish attacks, and a chain of forts a mile outside, but now there is no garrison.

In such burning quarters, one of the hottest places on earth, it is pleasant to know that Erkoweit, the summer refuge of the Government, is 4,000 feet above the sea and is being made happy quarters from the burning heat. It is 35 miles from Suakin and possesses copious springs of excellent water. Suakin has no water, all has to



ATBARA-SUAKIN RAILWAY : A RECONNAISSANCE.



ATBARA-SUAKIN RAILWAY : SOME OF THE LABOURERS AT ATBARA.



IN THE RAVINES OF THE ATBARA, FASHER, NEAR KASSALA.



BAZAAR AT KASSALA.

be carried to it in skins, or obtained by the condensing from sea-water. The climate of the hill station is excellent, and the place is healthy. There is a telegraph to Suakin. In the winter the hills are capped with clouds, their slopes covered with grass giving excellent grazing. The Administrator has a wooden thatched hut, and the Staff have mud huts with plank roofs.

A contrast this to the former terrible quarters of dry Suakin. The dangers of the coral-reef-locked harbour are to be avoided by a new port being made farther to the north, at Sheikh Barghout, which will be safe and easily entered in all weathers. There will at last be a pleasant seaport in the Red Sea, and the railway to the Sudan will have dispelled the terrors of the desert, waterless caravan route to the Nile. The name of this new port has been altered to Bender Sudan.

Lieut.-Colonel Penton, Midwinter Bey, Captain Amery, and the Sirdar himself have kindly supplied many interesting photographs of Kassala, Suakin, and the progress of the railway.

The eventful modern historical records of Kassala and Suakin are most interesting, but this chapter has run to an inordinate length and we must deny ourselves the pleasure of recounting them.



LT.-COL. PENTON.

MAJOR FRIEND.

Sir R. Wingate.

CHAPTER XVI.

THE LAND OF "GUM ARABIC."

THE GOVERNOR GENERAL'S-INSPECTION OF KORDOFAN.

DARFUR.



NUR BEY ANGARA.

Ex-Emir under the Mahdi, was Governor of Darfur.

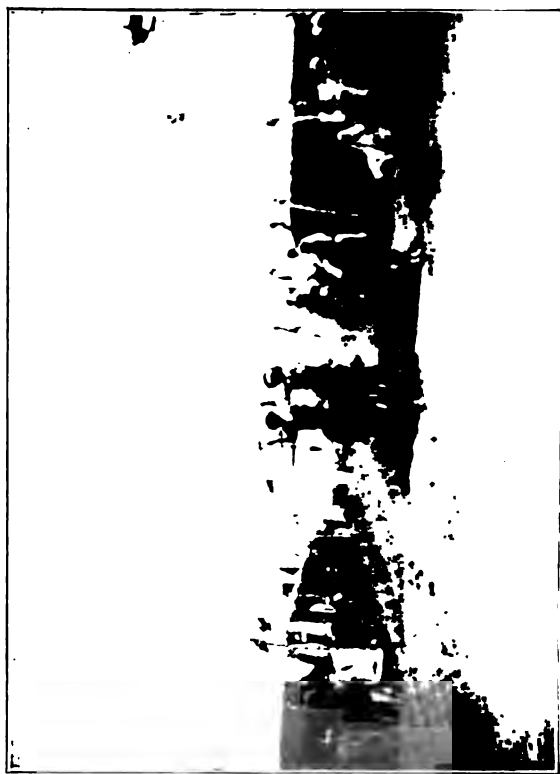
THE GOVERNOR-GENERAL'S INSPECTION OF THE PROVINCE OF KORDOFAN.
OMDURMAN TO EL OBEID. REMARKABLE WELLS. TREES WHICH STORE WATER.
DARFUR. NUR BEY ANGARA, EX-DERVISH EMIR.



KORDOFAN : A CAMEL DRINKING TROUGH.



OMDURMAN MARKET : GUM FROM KORDOFAN.



CHAPTER XVI.

THE EASTERN SUDAN.

KORDOFAN.

THE once important state of Kordofan lies north of the Bahr el Ghazal and west of the White Nile. Darfur extends its wide borders again due west of Kordofan.

It seems natural to describe this comparatively civilised and rich province first in order among the eastern provinces of the Sudan, as it stretches from the Nile far north of Omdurman, all the way to the northern boundary of the Bahr el Ghazal. Its western boundary is Darfur, its northern is undefinable as yet.

The Governor-General has been making official inspections of Kordofan, and his photographs have been given me by him with his usual kindness for the illustration of this chapter, and I also got several from Lieut.-Col. Penton, who visits the district

in the course of his sanitary inspections.

Kordofan is the great source of the trade in gum known in Europe as gum arabic.

The water supply is entirely derived from local rains which form pools and even lakes and marshes. These rains seem to be stored underground, the surface being very porous, and



OMDURMAN : DERVISH WIDOWS SORTING GUM FROM KORDOFAN.

Davidson.

there are many wells, which are often very deep. There are various water-storing trees in some districts called *tebeldi* or "*Homr*" trees, peculiar to this region.

These are naturally hollow, and are besides often scooped out, when used for storing water. They have a hole cut in the trunk, generally just above a big branch, on which a man can stand when drawing water. The hole is about 18 inches square. Round the bottom of the trunk a small pool is formed. This catches the rain during a rain-storm and it is then put into the tree by means of leathern buckets (*dilwas*). Some trees, however, in consequence of being open at the top, and having branches so formed that they act as gutters, fill themselves; these are called *El Sagat*, and are naturally very

valuable. The trees vary in diameter outside from 10 to 25 feet, and the water-holding portion is often 20 feet high. The bark is frequently much cut about, as it is used for making rope and nets. The largest of these trees are not used for water as the trunks are generally cracked. Water so stored remains sweet to the end of the hot weather, so that good trees are a valuable form of property, and are let or sold, either with or without the adjacent land. Near a town they are a source of many quarrels. On the main roads across the Dar Hamar, near Obeid, the Hamars make their living by selling water to travellers. The Dervishes did much wicked work by cutting holes at the bottom of these trees and so destroying the trunk. A species of melon is the principal food of the inhabitants, but south of El Obeid they are able to grow millet and durra. Cotton was once much grown and is still produced for local use in small quantities.

The best gum comes from a species of acacia between the parallels of 13° and 14°



EL OBEID : WAITING TO SEE THE GOVERNOR-GENERAL.

Some forests are full of red gum, but are not as well worked as they might be. The quantities of gum exported from the Sudan were very great, previous to 1879, nearly 150,000 cwts. annually. This trade was almost stopped by the Dervish troubles, but in 1901 had returned to 170,781 cwts. Ostrich feathers mostly come from Darfur.

Northern and Western Kordofan have many wild ostriches, which are hunted by the natives, and the flocks have been seen near Obeid. There is a large export of cattle from Kordofan.

El Obeid, the chief town of Kordofan, is on an eminence of 1,700 to 2,000 feet. It is supplied by wells 70 to 80 feet deep. It has now about 8,000 inhabitants. This town resisted the Mahdi for a long time and some of the tribes never were conquered by the Dervishes. Nahud is a new town, 165 miles west of El Obeid, and has 7,000 inhabitants. People who wished to avoid the Dervishes sheltered there. All the trade with Darfur passes through Nahud, and there is a great demand for cotton and trade goods. The people, who formerly wore only the dirty loin-cloth, are now quite keen for flowing garments of Manchester cotton. The chief trade of the place is in cattle,



WOMEN DRAWING WATER FROM A WELL.



5 O'CLOCK TEA IN CAMP, OMDURMAN TO EL OBEID.



PITCHING CAMP BETWEEN OMDURMAN AND EL OBEID.



THREE OF THE SERVANTS: GOVERNOR-GENERAL'S VISIT.

gum, feathers and ivory its exports. There are 40 stores owned by Greeks, Syrians, Jaalin, etc. Durra is plentiful. Nahud is the second town in Kordofan and is increasing, and the inhabitants have become less drunken since our occupation, and are improving in every way. Taiara was formerly the centre of the gum trade, but was destroyed by the Dervishes. It is now being rapidly restored to prosperity and has agents for its gum from Omdurman houses, and is rapidly growing.

The recent visit of the Governor-General was a great success. The photographs accompanying this chapter show the welcome he received from a very superior native class.

DARFUR.

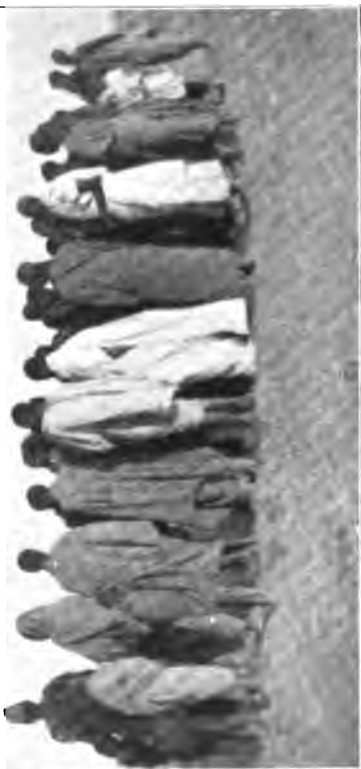
Darfur (or the land of the Fors) lies between latitudes 9° and 16° and longitudes 22° and 28° among the central group of mountains called Jebel Murra. These



CATTLE AT A DESERT WELL—ROAD TO EL OBEID.

mountains rise 1,000 to 1,500 feet above the plains, which are 400 feet above the sea. There are wells 250 feet deep, but there are rivers in the rainy season, whose beds afterwards dry up entirely. There were 1,500,000 inhabitants before the Mahdi's ravages. Now there are probably not more than half that number. Darfur was

annexed to Egypt in 1874. In 1898 after the battle of Omdurman, Ali Dinar, a descendant of a former Sultan of Darfur, seized the throne. The British Government officially appointed him their agent in Darfur in 1899. He is at present left in charge, paying to the Sudan Government an annual tribute of £500. There has, so far, been no British Resident, and the Sultan has hitherto behaved respectably and has abolished the slave trade in males, but girls and women are still sold in the state, but not allowed to be exported. The price of women thus traded is £4 10s. to £7 10s. and of girls about half those rates. In 1874 it took from 100 to 150 days to reach Fasher from Cairo; the post now takes 30 days. El Fasher is the chief town and contains, it is said, about 10,000 inhabitants. The cotton formerly grown in Darfur



EL' OBEID : WAITING TO SEE THE GOVERNOR-GENERAL.



SHEPHERDS AND SHEPHERDESSES AT DESERT WELL, EL OBEID.



PITCHING CAMP, EL OBEID.



MEN OF THE GOVERNOR-GENERAL'S BODYGUARD.



FUNGOR, KORDOFAN—HUTS ON HILL SLOPES.
Lt.-Col. Penton.

was excellent, now there is little grown. This matter should be looked after by the British Cotton Supply Associations. Trade is greatly on the increase, and is principally with Omdurman *via* El Obeid. There is a celebrated breed of horses which are said to be able to go for 60 hours without water. The Sultan is paying much attention to improving the breed, and has established stud farms. Camel breeding forms the occupation of several tribes, and cattle and sheep are plentiful in the south. Cotton goods are much in demand and come from the Sudan, also sugar and tea. The exports are feathers, ivory, pepper, rhinoceros horns and tobacco.

The history of events for the last twenty years in these distant provinces—Kordofan, Darfur and Bahr el Ghazal—is too involved and intricate to be entered upon here. The reader is referred to the interesting account of Zubeir Pasha, in Slatin's work, and the story of Emin Pasha (and the Stanley Expedition sent for his relief) and for more recent events, to Count Gleichen's *Anglo-Egyptian Sudan, Historical Section*.

Kordofan has been brought under the direct control of the Sudan Government, and the people welcome our rule, as the happy faces, in the illustrations of the Governor-General's Inspections, abundantly prove. Darfur it will take longer to bring under civilisation. The condition of Darfur, and indeed of Kordofan, was so bad that even the intrepid Schweinfurth did not



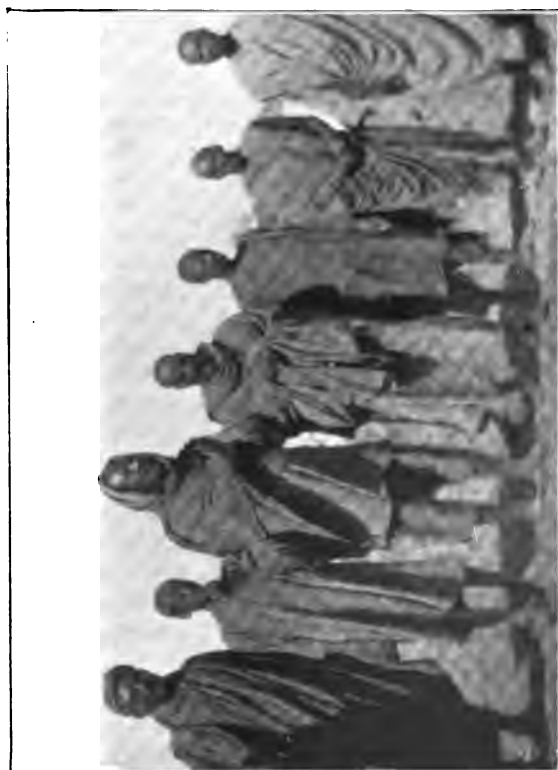
CAMP ON THE ROAD TO EL OBEID.



KORDOFAN WOMEN WELCOME GOVERNOR-GENERAL.



CAMELS DRINKING AT EL HOMRA, EL OBEID ROAD.



GUM PICKERS : EL OBEID ROAD.



LOADING UP : EL OBEID.



GREATER BUSTARD, SHOT ON EL OBEID ROAD.

attempt to enter them. In his *Heart of Africa* he speaks of those regions being (forty years ago) so lawless as to be quite unsafe for any traveller without a strong escort, and perhaps not even then. Petherick describes much the same condition of affairs in his time, and although he obtained a high-sounding document

from the Sultan of Darfur, which he engraves, he never got there. When I found that a few words had to be said about Darfur, I thought some old pictures might exist, and I searched in vain for any illustrated work, ancient or modern, but nothing could I find. Burckhardt managed to travel anywhere he wished to visit, but I doubt if he ever was at Darfur. If he crossed the country at all, he does not tell much that is interesting, save to remark that Kordofan was then (1813) under the rule of the King of Darfur. Burckhardt travelled with a caravan of slave traders across the Sudan in every direction to and from Shendi, which, in his day, 1813, was the most important trade mart of the country. He had entered the southern country in the same way, starting from Assuan, and joining the caravan under the pretext of being



WOMEN AT EL OBEID.



NATIVE WOMEN SINGING AND DANCING, EL OBEID.



WOMEN DANCING, KORDOFAN.



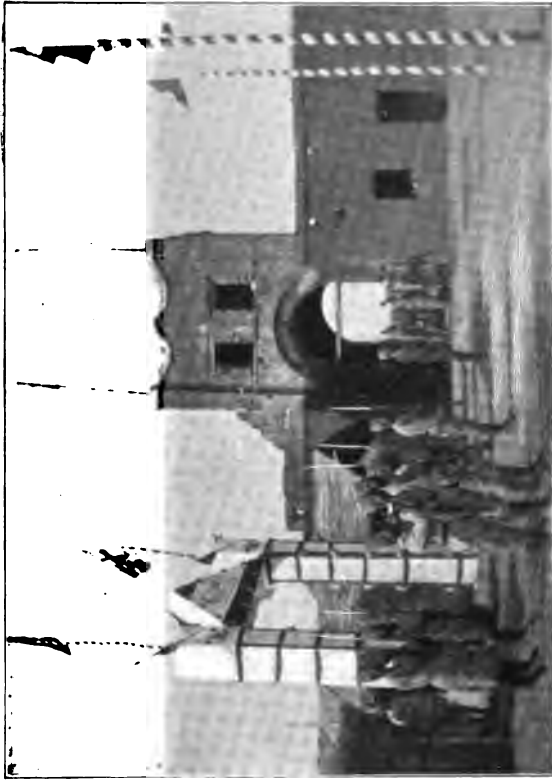
KORDOFAN WOMEN.



WOMEN DANCING, KORDOFAN.



INSPECTION : EL OBEID.



EL OBEID. THE OLD MUDIRIA : MARKS OF DERVISH SHOT, SIEGE OF 1883-4.



IN THE BAZAAR AT EL OBEID.



SIR REGINALD WINGATE VISITING THE GOVERNOR GENERAL.

in search for a long-lost cousin. A modern Burckhardt, with a Kodak, would have brought home a wonderful "bag" of snap-shots. He tells unpleasant incidents of practices of the magnates of Kordofan. Onepotentate, a Mussulman of high degree, exercised his rights over a cousin, a beautiful young girl, and seized her as a



LOADING UP.

piece of family property, to sell the poor thing at an enormous price into the harem of a northern potentate. Of course Burckhardt travelling with slave dealers, saw frightful scenes of brutality—he concludes by the remark that in all his wanderings with these merchants he never met one possessed of a single redeeming feature of what we know as humanity.

These caravans boldly made their way across the desert or by the river in every direction, merchants in feathers, gum, camels, horses, cloth, drugs, ivory, cattle, but

mainly dealers in wretched humanity. Abyssinia provided the most beautiful girls, while Darfur was the source of the supply of boys, who had been specially brutally treated. All men and women were sold for labour or for the northern armies (a new trade just then springing up). The prices and all the sources of supply and de-



REVIEW OF TROOPS AT EL OBEID.

mand of all sorts of goods are given. It is horrible reading. Were it not that Burckhardt's pages are interspersed with other matter, one would never want to see the book again. But in his way he was the pioneer of many sorts of intelligence. This intrepid traveller discovered Abu Simbel, Philae and all the temples between Philae and Wadi Halfa that are now threatened by the waters of the great Dam. He had even time to make plans of the temples and to copy the Greek inscriptions thereon. *En passant* he remarks that the people of Berber are the most depraved he ever met, excepting those of Suakin. Shendi and its people he seems to have much liked. But the caravan masters from Darfur had a much higher reputation for honourable dealing than those of the eastern centres of trade. However, each province is spoken of as the mart for certain varieties of slaves, showing how engrained with all traffic slave-dealing had become, and Burckhardt, after a long survey of the matter of slavery, says there is not the smallest hope for its abolition in Africa itself as long as these countries are possessed by Mussulmans, whose religion gives them the excuse to make war on idolatrous negroes, and who consider slaves as a medium of exchange in lieu of money. The only chance for the unfortunate black will be "some wise and grand plan, tending to the civilisation of the Continent . . . the education of the sons of Africa in their own country and by their own countrymen." He gives all credit to England for the efforts to abolish the Atlantic slave trade, which he says is trifling compared with that of the interior. How wondrously has all that Burckhardt deemed hopeless come to pass—all he dreamed of and more. The whole of our Sudan is now held for absolute freedom for its natives of every hue, and at last these unfortunate creatures will have a chance they never had before.

The Moslem customs which made slavery what it was are kept in check, and they are becoming, we hope, as earnest haters of slavery as ourselves, under the British Flag. But still they need watching and a preventive service all round the frontiers. They would be slave dealers, it is to be feared, were these precautions to be relaxed.

A portrait is given of Nur Bey Angara, of whom mention is frequently made in Slatin's *Fire and Sword in the Sudan*, and in Ohrwalder's and other books describing the Gordon troubles and the efforts made to save him. This man was Governor of Darfur, and a certain amount of trust was put in him. He is still alive at Omdurman, and pensioned for his loyalty, so is likely to be long on the hands of the Government. It is wise policy to encourage such men, former leaders, such as Nur Bey Angara and Zubeir Pasha, to throw their interests into our keeping. It touches the oriental mind of the masses to show them that loyalty to the English rule is on the paying side.



OUR NATIVE GUIDE—OMDURMAN TO EL OBEID.



THE "TRANSPORT OFFICER."—OMDURMAN TO EL OBEID.



SIR RUDOLF VON SLATIN READING AN ADDRESS TO THE SHEIKHS, EL OBEID.



A BIVOUAC ON THE ROAD TO EL OBEID.



KORDOFAN ARABS AND CHIEF.

CHAPTER XVII.
THE BAHR EL GHAZAL.
CAPTAIN BETHELL'S VISIT TO THE NIAM-NIAM.



AN EXILED KING FROM THE BAHR EL GHAZAL.

(*Balæniceps Rex.*)

This splendid specimen of a domesticated native has been long a resident and friend of all visitors at the Palace, Khartoum.—
(Photo by the Rev. Llewellyn Gwynne.)

SCHWEINFURTH'S TRAVELS. ZUBEIR PASHA.



HILLET EL NUER.

Sir W. Garstin.

CHAPTER XVII.

THE BAHR EL GHAZAL PROVINCE.

THIS vast province was not occupied until 1901, and is not yet fully explored and mapped. It is bounded south and west by the Congo watershed and northwards by the Bahr el Ghazal river which pours into the Nile through Lake No. Schweinfurth visited it upwards of thirty years ago. Since those days the land has certainly changed for the worse, roads being obliterated and entire tribes having migrated elsewhere. There are great possibilities, however, from such a well-watered region, with alluvial soil and fertilising granite detritus. The great production now is ivory, which, in order to protect the elephants from extermination by indiscriminate



THE BAHR EL GHAZAL.

Sir W. E. Garstin.

slaughter, has been proclaimed a government monopoly. Elephants still abound in the northern regions. The wide extent of the still unexplored territories of Darfur and Kordofan bound the Bahr el Ghazal region to the north. In November, 1900, Sparkes Bey with a strong native force and five British officers went by steamer to Meshra el Rek to reconnoitre and made excursions through the country, making friends with the natives and explaining the position of affairs. They made a long circuit by Wau, Fort Desaix, Rumbek, Tonj, and back to the Nile at Shambé. The Jur river was found blocked with sudd and Lieutenant Tell, R.N., was occupied in cutting it till June, 1902. A patrol was made to Deim Zubeir, Telgona and

Forga by Major Boulnois, who was appointed Mudir of the province. The natives were most friendly, the Nuers alone gave trouble, and had to be chastised, with the result that now all tribes are quite loyal. Sparkes Bey afterwards made long tours in the south and south-west of the provinces, and found the Sultan of the Niam-Niams most friendly. Unfortunately the members of our expedition suffered severely from fevers and Major Boulnois had for a time to resign command, but next year returned in good health. The headquarters are at Wau under the Mudir, Major Boulnois, and several white officers, including Captain Bethell, the present Inspector. There is also a garrison of native troops with posts stationed at Shambé, Rumbek, Tonj, Deim Zubeir, etc.



THE BAHR EL GHAZAL BLOCKED BY GRASS SUDD.

Sir W. E. Garstin.

The resources of the great Bahr el Ghazal province are as yet undeveloped. Many varieties of india-rubber and gutta-percha trees are plentiful, and the natives are experts in collecting this valuable source of revenue. Count Gleichen's invaluable report on the Anglo-Egyptian Sudan gives much space to this subject. The forests will some day be exploited for the trees that produce tannin, the bark of which fetches a good price in Omdurman market. The damage done in the forest regions by fires is great, yet there are many fine trees left here and there, showing what good supplies of timber can be expected under the care of the Forestry Department. There are several varieties producing satinwood and others resembling mahogany, while the bark is good as a febrifuge, and the seed produces an oil useful to keep off flies, etc., from wounds and

the attacks of poisonous flies. Bees are plentiful and large quantities of honey are collected. Salt is found only in the west, but is in demand everywhere. The Dinkas are fair cultivators, but now only raise one crop a year. Were they not too lazy to extirpate locusts, they might raise much more crops than they do. They exchange ivory for cattle in the north and are very fond of bartering their produce for beads, brass wire and for cloth, in the lines where Government posts bring them in contact with civilisation. Iron mines are plentiful and analysis shows in several cases 47 per cent. of pure iron. Copper ore is rich, the mines are at Hofrat el Nahas, on the borders of Darfur. The Dinkas are far behind as yet in civilisation, the men go naked, the women wear leather aprons fore and aft. It is evident that their wants are few, but as they become civilised,



THE BAHR EL GHAZAL : MOUTH OF THE RIVER ROHL. *Sir W. E. Garstin.*

the country being at peace, they will settle down to industry, and are an intelligent race. The Niam-Niams in the south are, however, far more intelligent, and great hunters. They had a bad reputation as cannibals, but assert that they only ate their enemies taken in war. As war is at an end there will be an excuse for abandoning this objectionable diet. Schweinfurth had no doubt of their being cannibals and gives an ugly story of what he actually saw; an old hag watching an abandoned infant, anxiously waiting for its death, that she might cook the corpse for the family meal. However, we must hope that the tribe have become total abstainers from such delicacies. All accounts represent the Niam-Niams as likely to benefit by civilisation and the establishment of our rule. The hairdressing of the men of all

the tribes of the Bahr el Ghazal is an elaborate affair: the women are less given to these adornments than the men. The men cultivate their beards, which are much admired, if long. The Niam-Niams are so much lighter-coloured than the other tribes, that they consider themselves "White Men." They make a coarse white cloth, and as the Niams are all clothed, they may be purchasers of such goods when the communications are opened up. Their land abounds with elephants, eland, rhinoceros, and buffalo. Their arms are bows, arrows and spears. They were converts to Islam, but they now have abandoned that faith, and merely believe in the existence of a God. Missionaries, of the right sort, would certainly be useful here. This great province must be very populous, but no accurate census appears as yet to be possible among such a wild people. Gessi Pasha, one of Gordon's most trusted lieutenants, said that in one year, in the Dervish times, 100,000 slaves were torn from the Bahr el Ghazal alone.

The newly added province cannot be expected to pay its way for a long time to come, but it has great possibilities in store. The amount charged against it in 1903 was £17,658 while the return was but £3,050. But much of the outlay was for permanent works, not fairly chargeable to income account. But its future is assured as it has immense agricultural possibilities, and is the most promising of all the provinces.

A memorable event in the history of the new province has just occurred. It is pleasant to hear (November, 1904) that Sir Reginald Wingate has paid his first official visit to Wau. He is always the envoy of peace and good-will; at the same time he can show the iron hand when necessary, and this is well-known all over the Sudan. "Les braves Belges" do not seem to take our peaceful treatment of the natives as complimentary to their management of the adjoining Congo State.

However, in time all frontier unrest will settle down, and meanwhile we must manage our own regions in our own way, which seems on the whole to be much appreciated by our new subjects. There is a report that arms which may be used against us are very easily obtained on the border. Of course we must not allow the importation of arms without our authority.

Sir Reginald Wingate has just sent me (December, 1904) some photographs from remote parts of this great province. These were taken by Captain Bethell of the Egyptian Artillery, who has recently visited Sultan N'dorma of the Niam-Niam tribe in south Bahr el Ghazal. Along with the photographs I have been sent the full description of Captain Bethell's adventurous expedition, which will be found valuable as the first of the kind of this almost unknown province. Being written on the spot, enhances its value, while Captain Bethell writes in such graphic style that his narrative is peculiarly interesting.

A WALK AND A VISIT IN THE BAHR EL GHAZAL.

This year being in the Bahr el Ghazal on military duty, I had the good fortune to be transferred temporarily to Sudan Civil Government for duty in the Wau district as an inspector, for it ended in my making one of the most interesting trips that can be made in this province.

On arriving at Wau, the head-quarters of the Mudiria from the post where I was stationed, I found I had been detailed to visit Sultan Tambura, a loyal Niam-Niam chief, whose country lies about 150 miles due south of Wau, and about 50 miles north of the Nile and Congo watershed.

A year or so ago, this chief was visited by the Governor of the Bahr el Ghazal, and ever since then he has always rendered the greatest assistance to Government by supplying carriers, and sending in men as recruits.

It took some days getting together my kit and supplies for the march there and back. Tambura had been told that an inspector was coming to visit him, and had sent his brother Mofwi in, with many carriers for my party; everything had to be made up into 50 lb. loads, and amongst the things I had to take were bales of cloth and beads, for presents to small chiefs, and for the purchase of supplies on the road; tents for myself, and the doctor, who was accompanying me, and a small Berthon boat.



SULTAN N'DORMA.

Captain Bethell.

Between Wau and Tambura's country there is now an extensive tract of uninhabited country, which in the old days was thickly populated, but slave trading and inter-tribal wars have broken many of the tribes up, leaving only small remnants in what used to be populous districts, and the few that were left in the centre of the Bahr el Ghazal sought protection either with Dinkas or the Niam-Niams, and became their slaves. There are two ways of getting into Tambura's country, one to follow the course of the River Jur, which runs through it, or to use the native track, known as the "Sika Atesh" or "thirsty road," in the dry weather. I left Wau the beginning of June with an escort of thirty men and eighty carriers; the escort was more of a badge of

authority than anything else, for the natives of the Bahr el Ghazal have the greatest respect for a man with a gun, even if it is of the oldest pattern, broken beyond repair, and last but not least without ammunition. In two days' march I had got clear of the villages in the Wau district, and taking the "Sika Atesh" I struck into the forest due south; for some way on this track, as is the custom in the Bahr el Ghazal, rest huts had been built at intervals of fifteen to twenty miles close to water, and at night in the rainy season, these huts are of the greatest service. I had to give up marching in the afternoon, and do a longer one in the morning, as the thunderstorms, which are very

heavy at this time of year, generally came on at that time, turning everything in a few minutes into a sea of mud and water. The track for several days lay over undulating country, covered with scrub, and in many places it was hardly visible, as the new grass had overgrown it. I saw many tracts of elephants, hippos and rhinoceros, and once of eland, of which there are a few in the Bahr el Ghazal, and whenever I wanted meat for the men, I invariably came across giraffe, which the men begged me to shoot, giraffe meat being greatly appreciated by the native on account of its sweetness; as a matter of fact, I shot very little game, most of it being inland. On the borders of Tambura's country about 100 miles south of Wau, the character of the country changed, being broken up by small mountain ridges, extending south nearly to the watershed. Another forty miles on, I



SULTAN TAMBURA.

Captain Bethell.

marched into one of Tambura's most northern villages belonging to a small Bil and a Sheikh, who had built huts for our use, and had prepared food for the men. The next day I moved to Gedi, a brother of Tambura, who told me when I got there, he had orders to feed me for a couple of days, as Tambura was certain I was very hungry and tired from my long march through the forest. Gedi had prepared food for all of us, and I was rather taken aback when one of his men brought me a tin basin full of stewed chickens and vegetables for my own consumption, for if this is the Niam-Niam idea of food, it is not to be wondered that the Dinkas have nicknamed the Zandeh race, Niam-Niam or "great feeders." In this village I also got the native beer



RUFFLE—LES RAPIDES.



TRIBAL DANCE OF THE "AJARS" NOT DANCED BY ANY OTHER TRIBE.



LES RAPIDES.



LES RAPIDES.

(*Om bilbil*) of the country for the first time, which is quite clear, and not unlike English beer in taste and colour: it is brewed from "telabun" or clusine, and is far superior to the "marissa" of the Sudan; here too I saw many Bilandas, whose chief object in life is to excel one another in hairdressing; many of them interweave their hair with small strips of bamboo till it stands out round their head like the brim of a straw hat.

Tambura's village lies some thirty-five miles to the south of Gedi, and I reached it after two days' marching; the country was still very hilly, but as the ridges run north and south, we had very little up and down work to do, the track running at the foot of the mountains.

Tambura had built bridges over the worst of the Khors and had widened the track for some ten miles out of his village; three miles out of it he met me with his chief



TAMBURA AND HIS MOTHER.

men, with not a rifle between them. Tambura led the way to his own enclosure, in the outer court of which were three large "dahr el-tor" or ox backs, so called from their long ridge roof; these he gave over to me for the use of the men, and in another court I found one for myself well built and well floored, Tambura's own house, and the huts of his many wives being in another enclosure at the back. Tambura, after giving me tea, left me, having told me he had put his cook at my disposal, and being extremely hungry after the march, I sent for him, rather wondering what sort of a cook Tambura kept, and I was surprised on his answering "soupe" and "poulet" on my asking him what there was to eat. I found out afterwards that

Tambura had got him from the French; besides this cook, Tambura picked up many civilised notions from them as well, though his knowledge of the language is limited to "Oui." They, the French, were in the Bahr el Ghazal some years, and they built a post in Tambura's village, which they called Fort Hossinger. During the time I spent in Tambura's village, I had plenty to do; many days were spent in interviewing his chief men, and finding out from them about their villages and people. One morning I reviewed Tambura's army, which is armed with weapons of all sorts and sizes, and was much amused with their march past, when the whole lot filed past me, headed by a band of drums, bugles, and long horns made of elephant tusks. I obtained many interesting photographs of the village and people, and could not help comparing Tambura when I photographed him in front of his

—again offered the holy title of Mahdi by the man who took it himself, then exiled, afterwards pardoned, and now an energetic supporter of the English Domination. He is now a weak old man, respected by some, feared even yet by others. It is a wonderful tale, one that could only have happened in this country of contrasts. Let us hope the old man may have a peaceful death, among the English people, whom, after all his strange career, he really seems to love, and to whom, in his old days, he has tried to be of service in practical civilisation. As a great agriculturist, his property at Geila is an object lesson of much value in the efforts we are making to teach the importance of improving the tillage and variety of the best-paying crops.

As the first inspection of the remotest province by the Governor-General is worthy of record, I give the Official Report of the Ministry of War which reached me after this chapter was in type.

"The Ministry of War has just published an official narrative describing the Sirdar's recent mission to the remote stations of Anglo-Egyptian jurisdiction in the Sudan. The Sirdar with his staff set out from Khartoum on November 7th, travelling by steamer as far as Wau. The journey to that point occupied slightly over ten days. The occasion was a memorable one, as it was the first time the Governor-General of the Sudan had penetrated to the heart of the Bahr el Ghazal province. After devoting a couple of days to inspection duties, the Sirdar convoked an assembly of the officers and functionaries of the province, the principal sheikhs and rulers of the surrounding tribes, as well as the Catholic missionaries of the region. Among the native potentates present were the Sultan of Faroge and the Sultan of the Dinka tribe. The Sultan of the Niam-Niams, though travelling northward with all possible speed, did not reach the rendezvous in time to attend the Sirdar's reception.

"The latter delivered an address, explaining to the assembly the political intentions of the new Government. He enjoined them to refuse to lend their ears to reports crediting the Government with the least intention of authorizing slavery, or other unlawful acts. He severely reproved the indolence and disloyalty of some of the auxiliary tribes, and concluded with a peroration inviting them all to co-operate with the Government towards the peaceful administration, the welfare, and prosperity of the Bahr el Ghazal. This allocution produced a salutary impression on the native chiefs—an effect further reinforced by a distribution of presents to those who have hitherto shown themselves friendly to the Sudan Government.

"During the stay at Wau, it was found that the River Jur is navigable for 70 miles to the south of the town, at least during six months of the year. At Wau the Sirdar inspected the gutta-percha plantations now being cultivated from which favourable results are anticipated. Passing through Meshra-el-Rek, and inspecting the military posts at Taufkia, Kodok, Melut, Renk, Kawa, and Dueim, the Sirdar and his retinue finally reached Khartoum on November 27th."

THE END.

INDEX.

Abai, River, 294.
 Abbas Island, 163.
 Abu Hamed, 22, 73.
 — Haraz, 288.
 — Kika, 205.
 — Klea, Battle, 82-84.
 — Ramla, 274.
 — Simbel, 3.
 — Zeid, 205.
 Abusir, Cliff, 32.
 Abyssinia, 283 *sqq.*
 Ahmet Fedil, 175 *sqq.*, 292.
 Akasha, 34.
 Amara, Temple, 41, 42.
 Ambigol, 34.
 Amenemhat III., 39.
 Amenhotep III., 43-52.
 Amenhotep's Scarabs, 50-53.
 — Temple, Luxor, 44.
 American Mission Schools, 139, 212-215.
 Amery, Capt., 133.
 Amherst of Hackney, Lady, 34.
 Ancient Egyptian Soldiers, 7.
 — Fort, Defufa, 41.
 Antiquities of Meroë, 145-166.
 Anuaks, 216.
 Atbara Bridge, 22.
 — River, 289, 318, 320.
 Austrian Mission, 226.
 Avenue of Rams, 49.

 Bahdur Georgis, 304.
 Bahr el Ghazal, 226, 228, 345-7.
 — el Jebel, 223 *sqq.*
 — el Zeraf, 226.
 Baker, Sir Samuel, 185.
 Baker's Old Post, 244.
 "Balœniceps Rex," 130, 343.
 Bamboo Forests, 293.
 Ban Naga and Temples, 156-8.
 Banks at Khartoum, 124.
 Bari Tribe, 233 *sqq.*
 Baths, 22.
 Battle of the Atbara 78.

Bayuda Desert Pass, 82.
 Bedden Island, 246.
 Ben Hur, Temple, 30, 33.
 Beni Shangul, 274.
 Berber, 22, 24, 79.
 Berber-Suakin Railway, 5.
 Beresford, Lord Charles, 84.
 Bethell, Capt., 348-354.
 Blue Nile, 253.
 Bor, 238.
 Boulnois, Major, 346.
 Breasted's Translation, 30.
 Buhen, Stele, 30, 31.
 Burckhardt, 336-9.
 Buré, 304.

 Caillaud's Travels, 29 *sqq.*
 Cataract, Second, 27, 32, 33.
 — Third, 54.
 — Fourth, 72.
 — Fifth, 77.
 — Sixth or Shabluka, 25, 80, 86-8
 Cavvadias, 104.
 Christian Church, Abyssinia, 313.
 Coffee Plantations, 306.
 Colborne, Col., Discovers Temple, 63.
 Colonies, Old Soldiers, 270.
 Colossal Lamb, 142.
 — Lion, 43, 48.
 — Statues, 54-7.
 Colossi at Thebes, 41.
 Cromer, Lord, 3, 5, 13, 194-203.

 Dalgo, 34.
 Darfur, 332-6.
 Death of Khalifa, 175-182.
 Debra Tabor, 300.
 Defeat of Mahmoud, 80.
 Deldi Bridge, 304-5.
 Delgi, Lake, 293.
 Dentemma, 208.
 Dengelber, 308.
 Der el Ahamda, 208.
 Dinder, River, 266.

JUL 8 - 1943

